

HOUSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



R0115789562














For June - ,

October, 1928

Richard



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2012 with funding from  
LYRASIS Members and Sloan Foundation





# AUTHENTIC HISTORY KU KLUX KLAN, 1865-1877

BY  
SUSAN LAWRENCE DAVIS

7  
36  
D  
1924

SUSAN LAWRENCE DAVIS

*Publisher*

488 SEVENTH AVENUE  
NEW YORK, N. Y.

COPYRIGHT, 1924, BY  
SUSAN LAWRENCE DAVIS  
MOTION PICTURE, FOREIGN, AND ALL  
OTHER RIGHTS RESERVED

Printed in U. S. A.



## HOUSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY

To My Mother, Sarah Ann (McClellan) Davis, and the Other Southern Women Who Designed and Manufactured with Their Own Fingers the Regalia for the Ku Klux Klansmen and the Trappings for Their Horses, and to the Ku Klux Klan 1865-1877 Both the Living and the Dead, This History Is Gratefully Dedicated.



## PREFACE

The purpose of the "Authentic History Ku Klux Klan, 1865-1877," is in justification of the men and measures adopted which led to the redemption of the Southern States from Radical, Carpet-bag and Negro rule as was imposed by the Federal Government's reconstruction measures upon them after the surrender of the Confederate States Army at Appomatox Court House, Virginia, 1865.

Ex-President Woodrow Wilson said in the *Atlantic Monthly*, January, 1901, in an article, "The Reconstruction of the Southern States": "Reconstruction is still revolutionary matter. Those who delve in it find it like a banked fire, still hot and fiery within, for all it has lain under the ashes a whole generation; and a thing to take fire from. It is hard to construct an argument here which shall not be heated, a source of passion no less than of light. . . . The revolution lies there as natural as it was remarkable and full of prophecy. It is this which makes the whole period of reconstruction so peculiarly worthy of our study. Every step of the policy, every feature of the time which wrought this subtle transformation, should receive our careful scrutiny. We are now far enough removed from the time to make that scrutiny both close and dispassionate. A new age gives it new significance."

I realize that the period covering reconstruction and reëstablishing white supremacy in the States which seceded from the United States in 1861 is a "sleeping volcano and a Vesuvius at rest," but it is not my intention to start a conflagration, rather to throw enough light on the Ku Klux Klan of that period to justify their mysterious movements in that momentous time by which they steadied the hatred, passion and injustice heaped upon an overpowered but brave and loyal people who had lost all except their honor and their faith in God during the Civil War.

With their own Government and the remainder of the world against them the Ku Klux Klan raised the South Phoenix-like from her ashes, and in the rebuilding caught "the sunshine of forgiveness in the brick and mortar," the immortal words of Henry Grady.

Although many things are still "*invisible*" about the Ku Klux Klan one thing is very plain; that is, that they have been so unjustly misrepresented by would-be historians and "investigators," I have undertaken the task of correcting these false impressions so far as lies in my power.

Having known personally many of the original Ku Klux Klan and gleaned from them, though reluctantly, facts stated in this book, I have also included documentary evidence setting forth the causes which were conducive to the life and strength of this powerful Order.

A vast amount of research work has been done to

confirm the statements here laid down, representing as they do a glowing tribute to the lofty principles and heroic chivalry of the Ku Klux Klansmen of the "Invisible Empire" who stood ever ready to see justice done to black and white, high and low, and above all to protect the womanhood of the country and to secure for their children and their children's children contentment and happiness in the land we love.

In the collection of illustrations for this book I desire to extend my thanks to Mrs. Stella G. Hawkins, Mr. and Mrs. H. H. K. Jefferson, Margaret Wallace (Mrs. Victor Gage), Margaret Gage (Mrs. Morris W. Bush), Birmingham, Ala., Marie Bankhead (Mrs. Thomas M. Owen), State Historian of Alabama, and her assistant Miss V. Baxter, Bessie Collins (Mrs. John R. Moore), Montgomery, Ala.

Mr. William B. A. Taylor (Public Library), Dr. and Mrs. Henry Gaines Hawn, Mrs. Phoebe Hawn Northrop, Miss Jane Northrop (My Mascot), Mrs. James Henry Parker, Mrs. F. G. Burke, Miss Leila Usher, Mr. and Mrs. William P. Hamann and Mr. and Mrs. Pendleton Watson, New York City.

Mr. and Mrs. Arthur Lloyd Seaton, Sadie Ford (Mrs. Walter Edward Hutton), Mr. William Alexander Miller (Library of Congress), Mr. L. C. Handy (Artist), Captain Fred Beall, Colonel Lee Crandall and Mr. Benjamin Carter, Washington, D. C.

Miss Mary Mason, Judge James E. Horton, Jr., Anna Hobbs (Mrs. James E. Horton, Jr.). The

late Mr. Thomas Maclin Hobbs, Mr. William Cass Nichols (husband of my sister, Paxie Davis), Mr. James H. Gordon, Officer of the United Confederate Veterans' Camp. Miss Mary McClellan, and my sister, Miss Ann Richardson Davis, Athens, Alabama.

I am greatly indebted to Miss Edith Pope of the *Confederate Veteran* of Nashville, Tennessee, for the loan of several portraits of members of the Ku Klux Klan (1865-1877) and other courtesies, and to the late Colonel Sumner A. Cunningham (Founder of the *Confederate Veteran*), and to Mrs. John Harwood and Miss Cynthia Carter, Pulaski, Tennessee.

I wish especially to acknowledge my appreciation of the marvelous illustration and painstaking execution of the Ku Klux Klansman of 1865-1877 on the cover of the book drawn from my description by the great American cartoonist, Mr. C. K. Berryman (a native Kentuckian), and for the outlined portrait of President Harding within the tribute paid by him to the Confederate Veterans, which was engrossed for this history by Mr. Samuel James Pridgen of Atlanta, Georgia, to whom I am greatly indebted.

SUSAN LAWRENCE DAVIS,

*Athens, Alabama.*



# CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I    INTRODUCTORY . . . . .	1
II   TENNESSEE. PULASKI KU KLUX KLAN ORGANIZED	6
III   ALABAMA. ATHENS KU KLUX KLAN ORGANIZED .	35
IV   THE FIRST CONVENTION, KU KLUX KLAN, NASH- VILLE, TENNESSEE, MAY, 1867 . . . . .	80
V    FOURTH OF JULY PARADES . . . . .	96
VI   TENNESSEE ANTI-KU KLUX KLAN LAW . . . .	109
VII   PRESIDENT JOHNSON'S POLICY . . . . .	129
VIII   THE FEDERAL KU KLUX ACTS . . . . .	144
IX    THE UNION LEAGUE OF AMERICA . . . . .	171
X    CONDITIONS FROM 1870-1877 . . . . .	180
XI   THE "INVISIBLE EMPIRE"—RECONSTRUCTION IN THE DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA . . . . .	192
XII   VIRGINIA . . . . .	197
XIII   MISSISSIPPI . . . . .	212
XIV   GEORGIA . . . . .	221
XV    NORTH CAROLINA . . . . .	232
XVI   TEXAS . . . . .	245
XVII   MISSOURI . . . . .	255
XVIII   ARKANSAS . . . . .	269
XIX   FLORIDA . . . . .	278
XX    SOUTH CAROLINA . . . . .	282
XXI   LOUISIANA . . . . .	300
XXII   CLOSE OF THE KU KLUX KLAN . . . . .	308





## I.

### INTRODUCTORY.

No complete history has been written of the Ku Klux Klan, and I am endeavoring to place in this volume all the available material that I have gathered covering many years. Many of these facts were given me by the originators of the Ku Klux Klan at Pulaski, Tennessee, and the original members of the Ku Klux Klan of Athens, Alabama, the first one organized in that state.

An unfortunate publicity was given the Ku Klux Klan in 1884, when Mr. D. L. Wilson who was not a Ku Klux, and was a stranger in its birthplace, Pulaski, Tenn., became interested in its origin and began asking about it. He was so fascinated with the recital of the facts that he was told that Captain John C. Lester, who was one of the founders of the Ku Klux Klan had been requested by the others to put in writing for the first time such facts as they cared to give out then, regarding the Ku Klux Klan.

Mr. Wilson requested Captain Lester to allow him to see this manuscript in the winter of 1884, and offered to assist him in finding a publisher, if he would allow him to copyright the work jointly with him. Captain Lester was then a member of the Tennessee Legislature, and while in Nashville left the details of

the publication and copyright to Mr. Wilson. Mr. Wilson filed the title in the Copyright Office and changed the name of the book from "Ku Klux Klan, Its Origin, Growth and Disbandment," to "The Rise and Fall of the Invisible Empire." He then altered the manuscript in such a manner as to express the view that the work of the Ku Klux Klan had partially failed.

With this changed title he submitted it to the manufacturing company Wheeler, Osborn, and Duckworth, Nashville, Tenn. One of these gentlemen happened to be a Ku Klux, and went to Captain Lester and objected to the title, as he said the Ku Klux Klan "had risen but had never fallen." Captain Lester then filed the first title he had given the book, in the copyright office "Ku Klux Klan, Its Origin, Growth and Disbandment."

Mr. Wilson had distributed quite a number of these books but the original Ku Klux Klan at Pulaski requested Captain Lester to correct the errors and complete the history, as they attached no blame whatever to him for this unfortunate occurrence. Captain Lester was rewriting a complete history of the Ku Klux Klan from 1865 to 1877, inclusive, when his death occurred at Alexandria, Tenn., and many of his notes were given me by other Ku Klux and members of his family.

Believing, as the Ku Klux Klan did even in 1884, that their mission had been fulfilled, the entire Invisible Empire, disapproved of Mr. Wilson's version of it, and made an effort to stop the sale of the book.

While this effort was being made to revise the book, Mr. Wilson read an article in the *Century Magazine*, New York, entitled "Mob or Magistrate"; and as a contribution to this subject, he sent the Ku Klux Klan book to the magazine without the knowledge or consent of Captain Lester, and signed it "D. L. Wilson." The *Century Magazine* published this in the July number, 1884.

Editorially, and under "Topics of the Times," in the *Century Magazine* of that date, there was much discussion for and against the Ku Klux Klan.

Mr. Wilson omitted the chapters which Captain Lester intended to add to the new edition of the book which covered the ostensible disbandment in 1869; and this period has been accepted generally as the time of the close of the Ku Klux Klan. However, the true facts concerning its disbandment, as well as much of the material in the following chapters, were given me by Capt. John C. Lester, Major James R. Crowe, Capt. John B. Kennedy, Judge William Richardson, Capt. Robert A. McClellan, Major Robert Donnell, Capt. DeWitt Clinton Davis, the wives and daughters of many of the original Ku Klux Klan, by my father, Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis, Colonel Sumner A. Cunningham and General John B. Gordon, and other Ku Klux.

I have obtained material from the *Confederate Veteran* and from current newspapers, and last but not least I have interviewed and obtained first-hand information from hundreds of the Ku Klux Klan throughout the South, many of whom are still living.

Having been born and reared and spent most of my life within a radius of fifty miles from the birthplace of the Ku Klux Klan, the subject has always been near to my heart, and I recall the sense of protection afforded by the Ku Klux Klan in my childhood.

The compiling of this data has been one of the greatest pleasures of my life, having brought me in contact with many of the great men who were the leaders of the South during its most perilous history. I feel a deep sense of gratitude to the Ku Klux Klan and trust this explanation will erase the false impression that they failed in their purposes.

In support of this explanation I give the following from the *Century Magazine* of July 1884, the same number in which D. L. Wilson published the article on the Ku Klux Klan, which would lead one to think that the Ku Klux Klan had at least partially failed.

Quoting the words of this magazine: \* \* \* \* \*

"There is a growing sympathy with the whites of the South \* \* \* \* \* the whites had great provocation. In the same spirit men are beginning to accept the success of the Ku Klux Revolution as being in the results the inevitable solution of an anomalous political situation. Peace and happiness could never come to the South so long as the political lines were co-existent with the color lines, with the blacks in the ascendancy."

Captain John C. Lester never married and Mr. Wilson and he were both dead when the copyright on the Ku Klux Klan book copyrighted by them, ex-



pired. It was not re-copyrighted by Captain Lester's heirs because they knew that the book was not satisfactory and was being re-written by Captain Lester at his death. In 1905 Mr. Walter L. Flemming edited "The Ku Klux Klan; Its Origin, Growth and Disbandment," and re-copyrighted it in the name of Walter Lynwood Flemming.

Mr. Flemming was born in Alabama in a country quite remote from the origin of the Ku Klux Klan, and seems to know very little about the work of the Klan; and certainly added nothing new in his edition save a few names of the members of the Ku Klux Klan. He chose to retain the erroneous impression placed in the manuscript by D. L. Wilson, who stated that the Ku Klux Klan disbanded in 1869 instead of 1877.

Captain John C. Lester was born in Giles County, Tenn., and died at Alexandria. All dates were destroyed by fire. He practised law a number of years in Sheffield, Ala. He was a Christian gentleman and a gallant Confederate soldier. He originated the idea of the Klub which afterwards became the Ku Klux Klan.

A

1884, No. 541 P

## Library of Congress, to wit:

Be it remembered.

That on the thirteenth day of March, 1884,  
D. L. Wilson & Mrs. C. Lester, of  
Culaski, Tenn., have deposited in this Office the title  
 of a Book

the title or description of which is in the following words, to wit:

The Rise and Fall of the Invisible  
Empire: A History of the Origin and Growth  
of the Ku-Klux Klan.

the right whereof they claim as author—and proprietors in conformity with the laws of  
 the United States respecting Copyrights.

*R R Spafford*

Librarian of Congress

I hereby certify that the foregoing is a true copy of the original record of copyright.  
 In witness whereof, the seal of this Office has been hereto affixed this eleventh  
 day of August, 1923.

Copyright Office of the United States of America,  
 Washington, D. C.

(Dec. 1922—100)

*W. Brown*  
 Assistant Register of Copyrights

CDG-BW

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS  
COPYRIGHT OFFICE  
WASHINGTON

IN REPLY QUOTE FILE

NO.

August 11, 1923.

Dear Madam:

Search has been made in accordance with your request and we find the registrations shown as follows. In one case as noted copies were received. In the other case we have not found in your records mention of deposit of copies.

"The Rise and Fall of the Indivisible Empire", a History of the Origin and Growth of the Ku Klux Klan. No. 5401, March 13, 1884, Copyright by D.L. Wilson and John C. Lester. No record found of deposit of copies in connection with this registration.

"The Ku Klux Klan, Its Origin, Growth and Disbandment". No. 11219, June 3, 1884, Copyright by D.L. Wilson and John C. Lester. Two copies deposited Oct. 3, 1884.

Respectfully,  
THORVALD SOLBERG,

Register of Copyrights.

Miss Susan L. Davis,  
1716 Penn. Ave.,  
Washington, D.C.

By

*W.H. Cole*

Chief of Correspondence Division.

## II.

### TENNESSEE.

#### PULASKI KU KLUX KLAN ORGANIZED.

On December 24, 1865, at Pulaski, Tennessee, there assembled in a small brick building, the law office of Judge Thomas M. Jones, six young men who were soldiers in the Confederate States Army. They had lost all their property, there were no business prospects for them at the time; it was Christmas Eve and their town was saddened not only by the wreckage of Civil War, but by the visitation of a cyclone which had killed and injured many of its inhabitants and destroyed many homes; yet, the spirit of youth could not be conquered in their heroic hearts. One of these young men, Captain John C. Lester, said:

“Boys, let’s start something to break this monotony, and to cheer up our mothers and the girls. Let’s start a club of some kind.”

The evening was spent in obtaining their object—diversion and amusement. Two committees were appointed to select a name and to prepare a set of rules for the government of the order and the initiation of future members. They then adjourned to meet the following week.



Before the arrival of the next meeting one of the young men, Captain John B. Kennedy, was requested to stay in the home of Col. Thomas Martin, for its protection, while he and his family were absent from Pulaski. Captain Kennedy invited the other organizers of the club, Frank O. McCord, Calvin E. Jones, John C. Lester, Richard R. Reed and James R. Crowe, to meet him there.

During the evening the organization was perfected. Captain John B. Kennedy, on the committee to select a name mentioned one which he had considered, "Kukloi," from the Greek word "Kuklos," meaning a band or circle. James R. Crowe said "Call it Ku Klux," and no one will know what it means. John C. Lester said: "Add Klan as we are all Scotch-Irish descent."

He then repeated the words: "Ku Klux Klan," the first time these words ever fell from human tongue. The weirdness of the alliteration appealed to the mysterious within them; so the name was adopted with a feeling that they had chosen something which would excite the curiosity of their friends and carry out their idea of amusement, which, most unexpectedly to them, proved a boon to Pulaski and the South.

James R. Crowe suggested to make it more mysterious, that a costume be adopted. They then made a raid upon Mrs. Martin's linen closet and robed themselves with boyish glee in her stiff linen sheets and pillow-cases, as masquerading was a popular form of entertainment in those days. Wishing to

make an impression they borrowed some horses from a near-by stable and disguised them with sheets.

They then mounted and rode through the darkness, calling at the homes of their mothers and sweethearts, without speaking a word. They rode slowly through the streets of Pulaski waving to the people and making grotesque gestures, which created merriment to the unsuperstitious, and to the superstitious, great fear.

The next day they heard many favorable comments on the unknown boys who had so paraded, having optimism enough to penetrate the gloom which had settled over this once prosperous and happy community. Aside from the amusement they had created, it was reported on the streets, that many of the idle negroes thought they had seen ghosts from the near-by battle-fields, and had with haste gone back to their former masters, only too willing to work.

The trivial incident of the selection of the ghostly regalia had a most important bearing on the future of the organization. The potency of the name "Ku Klux Klan" was not wholly in the impression made by it on the public, but the members of the Ku Klux Klan themselves first felt its mysterious power, and realized that through this means they might accomplish something towards alleviating the distress then prevalent in their community. Yet their dominant idea was amusement, based on secrecy and mystery.

The one obligation exacted from members was to maintain profound secrecy concerning everything pertaining to the Ku Klux Klan. This obligation

prohibited disclosing that they were members of the Ku Klux Klan or giving the name of anyone of them who was a member, and from soliciting members.

This was exacted first, because of their determination to play upon the curiosity of the public; secondly, it was designed to prevent any responsibility resting on them following the initiation of new members. They desired new members and knew human nature well enough to feel that if they made the impression that they were very exclusive and select, applications for membership would be numerous.

This idea proved to be true. One ruse to arouse the interest of desired applicants was to say to them "I'm going to join the Ku Klux." If the person addressed showed a desire to join, the member would say, "I think I know how to get you in if you will meet me at the home of Col. Martin where I am staying for its protection in his absence"—and they would then set the hour. Many hundreds were initiated into the Ku Klux Klan in this residence from January until March, 1866, and it was here that the organization was perfected.

On March 25, 1866, the Ku Klux Klan having increased in numbers, so that they did not wish to meet in the private residence, they established regular headquarters at the home of Dr. Ben. Carter which had been recently wrecked by the cyclone, leaving only three rooms and a large cellar beneath them.

This was on a hill on the outskirts of Pulaski. Around the ruins of this home were the storm-torn trunks of trees which had once been a splendid grove.

Now they were like grim, spectre sentinels, making a dreary, desolate uncanny place, but it was most suitable for the purpose of the Ku Klux Klan as it had the appearance of being haunted and they were by the superstitious believed to be the spirits of the Confederate dead.

This mystery and secrecy of the Ku Klux Klan made a deep impression upon the minds of many men who united with it at this time, and their idea was that they contemplated some great and important mission. This belief caused its rapid growth, though there was not a word in the obligation taken to point out such a conclusion, but the impression grew and the high-sounding titles of the officers and the grotesque dress of its members seemed to them to mean more than mere sport.

The Committee on Rules had determined that no military or political titles should be used, and their recommendations were adopted to carry out the idea of the name and the regalia by mysterious and meaningless titles. So the following officers' names were adopted: Grand Cyclops, Grand Magi, Grand Turk, Grand Scribe, Lictors, and Night Hawks. The name of the meeting-place was called "The Den." The two Lictors were the outer guards of the Den and the Night Hawks were the couriers. The members were called Ghouls.

When a meeting was held one Lictor was stationed near the remains of the house on Carter Hill, where there was a cellar used for initiation. The other Lictor was placed some distance away, on the road lead-



ing into Pulaski. They were dressed in the regalia of the Ku Klux Klan and bore spears as their badge of office.

Through curiosity many men came to this Hill and approached the Lictors for membership. The Lictors would blow the whistles which had been adopted as a means of communication and the Night Hawks would answer with their whistles and take charge of the candidate, blindfold him and take him into the Den.

He would then be led around the subterranean rooms and treated to some rough sport after which he would be taken before the Grand Cyclops, who was Mr. Frank O. McCord, and many questions put to him. Often an unsatisfactory answer would cause him to be rejected. If accepted the Grand Cyclops would say: "Place him before the royal altar and adorn his head with the regal crown."

The oath would then be administered. The royal altar was a large mirror, and the regal crown was an old torn hat bedecked with donkey ears.

The Grand Turk would then remove the bandage from his eyes and the candidate would see his comical image in the mirror. Then the Grand Cyclops would relax his rules and the hitherto silent Den would ring with shouts and peals of laughter of the Ku Klux still in their disguise.

When a man too young applied the Lictors would tell him that he could not join. But when he persisted, he would be blindfolded and left seated on a fallen tree, to wait; after many patient hours he

would remove the bandage in desperation and seek the shelter of his home.

When men of undesirable character applied they would be taken to the top of the hill that rises by a gentle slope on the northern limits of Pulaski, placed in a barrel and sent whirling down the hill. It is needless to say that they did not learn any of the Ku Klux Klan's secrets, as had been their original intention.

The following is a statement of the Ku Klux Oath given me by Major Robert Donnell who was Grand Scribe of the Athens, Alabama Ku Klux Klan. He recited it from memory:

The Ku Klux Oath:

"I have applied for membership in the Ku Klux Klan of my own free will, and in the presence of God do solemnly swear that I will never reveal to any one any intimation of the signs, symbols, passwords, grips or secrets of the Ku Klux Klan. I shall never reveal to any one that I am a member of the Ku Klux Klan or that I know anyone who is a member.

"If for any cause whatever I shall withdraw from the Ku Klux Klan, I will keep its secrets as inviolately as when I was a member. As a member of the Ku Klux Klan I shall not be allowed to take any intoxicating liquor to any meeting of the Den. I shall not attend any meeting or go with the Ku Klux Klan on any mission when intoxicated.

"I take the pledge of total abstinence from intoxicating liquors during the duration of my membership in the Ku Klux Klan. Any member of the Ku Klux

Klan shall be expelled for violating this rule by a majority vote of the officers and Ghouls of the Den to which he belongs, and his banishment shall be final."

The grip, passwords and ciphers of the Ku Klux Klan remain wrapped in mystery to this day, as I have asked many hundreds of them for this information and have received the answer that those points regarding the Ku Klux Klan would die with them.

The following gives the duties of the officers, as adopted by the first organization.

It shall be the duty of the Grand Cyclops to take charge of the Den at meetings and initiate new members. It shall be his duty to appoint regular meetings of the Den and to call irregular meetings when needed. He alone can initiate candidates for membership, and reprimand members for disobedience of orders. The first Grand Cyclops was Frank O. McCord.

The Grand Magi: It shall be the duty of the Grand Magi to assist the Grand Cyclops and to obey all orders of this officer; and to preside at all meetings in the absence of the Grand Cyclops. The Grand Magi of the first Den was Captain John B. Kennedy.

Grand Turk: It shall be the duty of the Grand Turk to notify the Ghouls of all irregular meetings of the Den, when so directed by the Grand Cyclops or his substitute. It shall be his duty to meet and question at the out-post all candidates for admission to the Ku Klux Klan and he shall blindfold the can-

didate, administer the preliminary Oath, then to conduct such candidate to the Lictor, who in turn, takes the candidate into the presence of the Grand Cyclops for the final initiation. The Grand Turk of the first Den was Major James R. Crowe.

Grand Scribe: It shall be the duty of the Grand Scribe to take the orders of the Grand Cyclops, and deliver them orally to the Lictors who will deliver these orders to the Night Hawks to be taken to officers of other Dens. It shall further be the duty of the Scribe to keep a secret list of the members of the Den, to call the roll at all meetings, and to investigate the absence of members of the Ku Klux Klan. The duty of the Night Hawks was to communicate orally all orders given between Dens.

The Lictors were Mr. Richard R. Reed and Dr. Frank Grant for the first Den.

During the entire period of the Ku Klux Klan's existence, Carter Hill was the central seat of authority, and one or more of the officers who assisted General Nathan B. Forrest, were chosen from the six men who originated the Ku Klux Klan. Captain John C. Lester was the judicial officer, or Night Hawk, who would administer the oath to new members, and Mr. Calvin E. Jones, Night Hawk, who investigated the record of applicants.

The Ku Klux Klan had gradually realized that the most powerful devices ever constructed for controlling the ignorant and superstitious negroes and carpet-bag politicians, were in their hands. Each day some incident occurred to show the "amazing power



of the mysterious over the minds of all classes." These circumstances convinced them that the measures inaugurated for sport only could be used to protect the lives and property of the people of the stricken South.

✓ By a "gentlemen's agreement" throughout the South, no Ku Klux Klans were formed without the consent and co-operation of the six founders who originated the idea, at Pulaski, Tennessee.

At this time most of the eligible men in the town of Pulaski had joined the Ku Klux Klan there, and quite a number from Giles County. Requests were made by these county members to form Klans in their immediate neighborhoods, and while no provision had been made for this expansion, permission was granted, but the strictest injunctions were laid on these men as regards secrecy, mystery, and the high character of the men admitted.

The growth in the country districts was very rapid, and the news that the Ku Klux Klan was growing in numbers, created more sensation than the existence of the Klan itself in Pulaski.

After the County was organized, parades were frequent, and in their disguises, the Ku Klux Klan would attend meetings being held by the "Carpet-baggers" to incite the negroes and other evil-doers to depredations, and they would circle around these meetings without uttering a word and only making signs, always carrying a torch to light the way which afterwards led to the adoption of the Fiery Cross as their symbol.

The first use of the torch to guide the way was by the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan when they went to break up a meeting of carpet-baggers being held in the woods near the "Brick Church" in Giles County. The carpet-baggers were telling the negroes to burn the homes of their former masters and the land would be divided among them.

One faithful negro man was passing this meeting with a sack of meal on his mule taking it to his former master, whom he had never left, and heard the carpet-baggers call the name of his beloved "marster and mistis" as among the victims to be burned alive in their homes that night. He hurried home and told his young master, who was then a member of the Ku Klux Klan, what he had heard.

He left the old negro man to protect his father and mother with the only gun that he had, and hastened to Pulaski where he called together the Ku Klux Klan.

They rode into the meeting from every direction, and so frightened both the negroes and carpet-baggers that they did not stand "on the order of their going," but fled in haste.

They heard of other meetings of like character and spent the rest of the night breaking them up.

The next day many negroes who would not work were found at the plantation gates, appealing for work and protection.

Captain John Booker Kennedy, one of the six originators of the Ku Klux Klan, was born Nov. 6, 1841, on the beautiful "Kennedy Farm," Wales, Giles County, Tennessee. He was the eldest son of

John and Patsy Kennedy of distinguished Kentucky lineage. When he was eight years of age his father died and two years later his frail gentle mother passed away, leaving her children to be reared by an aunt.

The father left a fine estate which was managed by a guardian. Mr. Kennedy attended school in Pulaski and Center College, Danville, Kentucky. Returning from college in May 1861, he became a soldier of the Southern Confederacy enlisting in Company A, Third Tennessee.

He bore his part bravely in all the battles, hardships and imprisonment his regiment endured in the four years' struggle. His regiment was in the surrender of Fort Donelson, and after seven months imprisonment in Camp Douglas he was exchanged at Vicksburg Sept. 16, 1862.

He was conspicuous for gallantry in several of the many conflicts of the War, distinguishing himself by undaunted courage and adherence to his high ideal of duty. He was wounded three times. In February 1865, he was captured with a scouting party and kept under guard until March 17, when he ran away from the guards while they were shooting at him.

Traveling by night he made his way back to his regiment. One night while making his way back he ate supper with an old negro and his wife. He told them he was a Confederate soldier and they directed him how to avoid the Federals. He was in the last battle of the Confederacy at Bentonville, N. C., and was paroled at Greensboro, N. C.

Wrapping the bullet-torn, blood-stained flag under his clothing he marched from Greensboro to his home in Tennessee with his feet bleeding and torn, his shoes having been worn out, where he gave the flag to Mrs. Calvin H. Walker, widow of the Colonel of the Third Tennessee, who was killed in the battle of Bentonville. This historic flag draped the casket within which his grey-clad form lay in its last sleep when he passed away on February 13, 1913, which was a fitting tribute from the family of Colonel Walker.

At the close of the Civil War Captain Kennedy took a very important part in the rebuilding of his desolated state. He was one of the original six Confederate soldiers who organized the famous Ku Klux Klan in Pulaski, and helped to name this weird and mystic Order, which proved the salvation of the Southland in the dark hours of reconstruction and he was the last of the original six to pass away.

He was married to Alice McClain of Lawrenceburg, Tenn., who was the pride and joy of his young manhood and the comfort and solace of his declining years. They had one son, Joseph McClain Kennedy, who became a brilliant physician and whose early death was a crushing blow to his parents.

Captain Kennedy creditably held the office of Circuit Court Clerk of Lawrence County, Tenn., for twenty-two years. For fourteen years he was Secretary of Mimosa Lodge, F. and A. M. He was a member of Frank Cheatham Bivouac, United Confederate Veterans, Nashville, Tenn. Mrs. Kennedy is now residing in Lawrenceburg, Tenn.



Major James R. Crowe was one of the most distinguished men of the six who founded the Ku Klux Klan. He was born January 29, 1838, in Pulaski, Tenn., to which place he returned after the War and for many years was a prominent factor in the business and political life of Tennessee.

Naturally a leader, he held front rank in any body of men to which it was his fortune to be thrown. He was a Confederate soldier, having enlisted at Marion, Ala., a few hours after Alabama seceded from the Union, and was a member of Company G in the celebrated Fourth Alabama Regiment.

He was attending school at the Marion Military Institute at that time. He was severely wounded in the first battle of Manassas, and was taken to Charlottesville, Va., and later to his home in Pulaski where he was expected to die. He was then discharged from the army but would not accept. In November, 1861, he was appointed Drill Master as the Government refused to accept him in the ranks on account of his physical condition.

He was assigned to duty in the 53rd Tennessee Regiment at Camp Weakley, Nashville. This regiment was ordered to Fort Donelson, and he participated in that battle with his arm in a sling. Being unable to load Private Charles Scoggins would load and he would fire both guns. He afterwards walked to Shiloh and participated in the second day's battle. Retreating with the army to Corinth he was sent in charge of hundreds of prisoners to Tuscaloosa, Alabama.

In May, 1862, he was assigned to duty with the 35th Tennessee Infantry under Col. B. J. Hill. Col. Hill ordered Captain Crowe's company of sharpshooters forward and said, "Crowe, deploy your men, go to the right oblique, and unmask our regiment. I want you to be the first man to reach the Shelton House."

He obeyed the order to the letter and engaged the enemy while the regiment came on rapidly behind. Captain Crowe said that in all the battles in which he was engaged he never knew such rapid and heavy firing; he lost more than half of his men. General G. T. Beauregard issued a special order in tribute to his regiment for gallantry on the field.

Captain Crowe surrendered in Memphis on June 16, 1865. No soldier in the service served longer than he, as shown by the dates of his enlistment and surrender. He was Colonel on General Harrison's Staff of Confederate Veterans and also Colonel on the staff of all the Commanders in Chief (United Confederate Veterans).

As a Mason, Major Crowe attained the rank of Most Illustrious Grand Master of the Grand Council of Tennessee, in 1886. He was a member of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church and was active in all its councils. Major Crowe removed from Pulaski to Sheffield, Alabama, when that town was founded in 1880, where he became a very progressive citizen and acquired large interests.

His death occurred there on July 14, 1911, and brought great sorrow to that community which held

him in the highest esteem. He was laid to rest in Pulaski, Tenn., July 16, 1911, by his old comrades with their impressive burial service. Major Crowe was survived by his wife, three daughters, Mrs. Charles J. Alleyn, Mrs. John W. Alleyn, Mrs. Lou P. McFarland, and one son, James R. Crowe, Jr., who enlisted in the World War in 1917 and was killed overseas in the Air Service in 1918.

Calvin E. Jones, one of the six original Ku Klux Klan was a son of Judge Thomas M. Jones. He was a lawyer, a member of the Episcopal Church. He was Adjutant of the 32nd Tennessee Infantry, Confederate States Army.

Richard R. Reed, one of the original six Ku Klux Klan, was a lawyer in Pulaski, Tennessee. He was a member of the Third Tennessee Infantry. He was a Presbyterian.

Frank O. McCord was Grand Cyclops of the original Ku Klux Klan and was editor of the *Pulaski Citizen*. He was a private soldier in the Confederate States Army. He was a member of the Methodist Church South.

General John C. Brown, of Pulaski, who was a distinguished lawyer, was among the first members of the original Ku Klux Klan, and was Grand Dragon of the Realm of Tennessee. He was later Governor of Tennessee. Dr. Frank Grant was the

seventh member of the original Ku Klux Klan, and was surgeon of the Den.

**SUMNER ARCHIBALD CUNNINGHAM** who was (Secret Service Courier) Grand Monk of the Ku Klux Klan was born in Bedford County, Tennessee, in 1843 and died in Nashville, December 20, 1913. He lost his father when quite young and was reared on a farm by a splendid mother who was his inspiration throughout life. He entered the Confederate States Army on November 4, 1861, as a private in Company B, 41st Tennessee Regiment. He was so small a boy that his rifle barrel had to be cut off so that he could use it more freely. The first battle in which he fought was Fort Donelson, (Tennessee) where he was captured and put in prison at Camp Morton, Indianapolis, Indiana, where he remained several months before being exchanged at Vicksburg, Mississippi, where he began fighting under General Joseph E. Johnson. He was in many famous battles, but his most conspicuous bravery was at the battle of Franklin, Tennessee, the "Balaklava of America," where he was firing on the breastworks, using guns being loaded for him by General Strahl when he was killed; and, at the battle of Nashville.

After the close of the Civil War, he edited the *Rural Sun* at Nashville, Tennessee. He then bought and edited the *Chattanooga Times*, sold it and went to Cartersville, Georgia, where he lost his beloved wife in 1879. She was Miss Laura Davis of Georgia. A son and daughter were born to them and Mary died



in infancy, and Paul lived to magnificent manhood, when he was drowned in the Rio Grande river, while civil engineering for the United States government in surveying the international boundary between the United States and Mexico in 1901. This blow saddened Colonel Cunningham's life but did not embitter him. He never remarried and had no close relatives except one sister, Mrs. Thomas W. Wakefield of Cornersville, Tennessee, but he filled his life with friends who, loving him, seemed to soften his sorrow. It was said that Colonel Cunningham knew personally and intimately more people than any man in the country. "He was a Southerner; he was a Confederate soldier; and then he was a servant." These were the words spoken by his pastor, Mr. Vance, at the time of his death. He said: "I think that is the greatest thing the Bible says about our Saviour, 'He made himself of no reputation and took upon him the form of a servant.' The Christian ideal of greatness is servanthood. Colonel Cunningham was a servant. He was anybody's servant to whom he could render a service. He lived his religion. He glorified in service for other people.

"If he passed an old woman on the street with a heavy load, he got his arm under her bundle; and I have known him on a wet day to take the overshoes off his feet to give to an old and feeble, ragged woman to protect her from the weather. You have seen him. I have seen him; this was the way he lived. It was the greatest thing about this man 'who lived in a

house by the side of the road and was a friend to man.' ”

In 1881 Colonel Cunningham went to New York and founded a paper as an exponent of Southern sentiment called *Our Day* but only edited it a few years when he returned to Nashville. Later on, he participated in the raising of funds for the erection of a monument to President Jefferson Davis at Richmond, Virginia, and in this work he traveled all over the South and met thousands of Confederate veterans and their families who were henceforth his friends. He personally financed much of this work and when his correspondence on this subject became so great he could not handle it, he decided to print a leaflet setting forth the object of his undertaking. In this leaflet he distributed much information concerning the records of the Confederacy and it seemed to be a long-felt want that he had filled for the Confederate soldiers. He later decided to continue this leaflet as a medium of communication between the veterans of the South and extended it into a magazine, the *Confederate Veteran*, which he edited and owned until his death, and in his will he left this organ to the Confederate Veterans, the Daughters of the Confederacy, Sons of Confederate Veterans, and Southern Memorial Association. He had two supreme objects in life to which he consecrated the *Confederate Veteran*; one was to stand for the “Old South” and to defend its cause against evil tongues and pens. He ruled the phrase the “New South” out of his vocabulary and would not use it in the

*Confederate Veteran.* He belonged to the brave and gentle "Old South" for which Lee and Jackson, Forrest, Gordon, Johnston, and the Morgans had fought and for which thousands of the "flower and chivalry" of the manhood of the South made the supreme sacrifice. The second was to write the truth of history of the War between the States. It was with hope rather than with confidence that he launched this enterprise, but he was inspired by the fact that at that time so few Confederate soldiers, even among the Southern leaders, had set down their narratives for permanent preservation and that the history of the "War between the States" was almost altogether written by those on the Northern Side. "Recognizing that there were two points of view, he still deprecated the idea of the children and the future generations of the South accepting without question the views of writers on the Northern side. Appreciating the efforts previously made to preserve the truth as they saw it, he still had other views than those carried out and entertained in those publications, and believed that the true remedy was the gathering up of the multifold experiences and observations of the men who had fought in the Southern army before these men had passed away, leaving no eye witnesses of the events in which they had taken part. Both North and South seemed inspired through Colonel Cunningham to present views which were less biased and less offensively partisan than the earlier books.

"The truth in all things set down," was the aim of

the *Confederate Veteran*, and through its influence this became more the aim of the writers on both sides. It was in the columns of the *Confederate Veteran* that a large part of the wealth of heroic deed and courageous achievement was first unearthed from forgotten records and from dormant memories.

The historian of the future who wishes the truth about the War between the States will be forced to go to the columns of the *Confederate Veteran* for it, for the truthful records of this war from which the real history will have to be written can only be found within its pages.

Col. Cunningham was a Southerner; he loved the South; "the sunny sunny South." It was always that to him. The South was his passion and he loved it passionately with every fibre of his being. There are some people who might not understand this kind of devotion. They think it is narrow and sectional. People outside of the South sometimes ask us why we who live there have this kind of devotion to it. It is because the South has suffered. It takes suffering to feel devotion. The people there are welded together in the furnace fires of suffering. There is a kind of romantic devotion that gathers about it like that of the tender mother for her stricken child and each Southerner has made every effort to preserve this romance.

Among the many beautiful tributes paid to Colonel Cunningham I quote the following from the Tennessee Division, United Daughters of the Confederacy through its committee composed of Miss



Susie Gentry, Chairman, Mrs. W. T. Davis, Mrs. John P. Hickman, Mrs. S. F. Wilson, Mrs. M. B. Dozier, expressing its appreciation of the friendship and interest ever shown by the editor of the *Confederate Veteran* in the work of the United Daughters of the Confederacy: "It was his mission to stand for the truth in history; and he lived, fought and died for it, faithful unto death. It was his pen wielded unceasingly and potently for the truth and right in the dark days of 'carpet-bag rule' and since that largely brought the South into the estate that she justly deserves. It was his gentle, kind heart that welded the sections of North and South into a truer brotherhood, and it was his generous, just mind that in his last public act conceived and carried to completion the bust of Col. Richard Owen, United States Army, and placed it in the capitol of Indiana as a token of esteem and honor to a conscientious officer and tender-hearted man for the Confederate prisoners of war. No other man is known to have done a similar act in all the world and it is no wonder that he is beloved by all who knew him 'when the fruit of the spirit' so exhibited itself in goodness, gentleness and loving-kindness and meekness."

It is difficult to conceive of a higher tribute to courtesy and kindness than this act of erecting a memorial to a Union soldier who had charge of a prison for the Confederates at Camp Morton, Indiana. The inscription under the bronze bust in the State capitol there tells its own story:

“COLONEL RICHARD OWEN,  
COMMANDANT CAMP MORTON PRISON, 1862.  
Tribute by Confederate prisoners of war and their  
friends for his courtesy and kindness.”

Colonel Cunningham was a Christian; he was an elder in the First Cumberland Presbyterian Church in Nashville, Tennessee, but he had a kind of religion better than creed, the kind of religion that overflows all life. He believed that “inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.”

General Bennett H. Young, Commander in Chief of the United Confederate Veterans, in his address at the grave when Colonel Cunningham was laid to rest on the hillside in Shelbyville, Tennessee, beside his mother and children, said: “Out in the darkness and gloom of a storm on the Aegean Sea, when the waves were tossing a frail craft high in the air and lightnings were flashing, showing how impotent was man when fighting nature’s forces, and deep-toned thunderings were filling space with their terrorizing voices, the sailor, looking up to heaven, cried out, ‘O Neptune, god of the sea, thou canst save me if thou wilt; thou canst destroy me if thou wilt; but I shall keep the rudder true.’ ‘He kept the rudder true,’ as he knew the right, he always dared to do it. He fell with the drums beating and the flags waving out on the firing line with no fear in his heart. He was with General Patrick Cleburne when he fell on the breastworks in the battle of

Franklin, who said with his last breath, 'Boys, I am dying; fight it out, fight it out.' Our friend fought it out and now he rests in peace."

Colonel Cunningham was a Ku Klux Klan Monk of the "Invisible Empire," and in 1912 he told me he was beginning to gather the facts of the Ku Klux Klan for publication in the *Confederate Veteran* and at that time give me much of the information regarding the Ku Klux Klan contained in this history. He had previously introduced me to a number of the leaders of the Ku Klux Klan, among them Major Crowe, Captain Kennedy, of the original Ku Klux Klan, General Clement A. Evans, and others who were assisting him in accumulating this material. He was one of the organizers of the Ku Klux Klan in Georgia as he was there at that time and assisted General John B. Gordon when he went to South Carolina in 1877 to assist in seating the legally elected officials there. General Gordon gave me this fact for this history.

It is a matter of deep regret to all Southerners that Colonel Cunningham's life was cut off before he compiled the most romantic history of all time, that of the "Invisible Empire," for to him was due much of the success of this great movement in redeeming the South from carpet-bag and negro rule. Major James R. Crowe informed me that to Colonel Cunningham was entrusted the hazardous work of the Ku Klux Klan in Washington, D. C. (1865-1877) in obtaining secret information about the spurious Ku Klux Klan, which was organized there



and in which were many of the radical Senators and Congressmen. Colonel Cunningham said I could make this statement in my history and that he had never given this fact to any one and was not in a position to do so until he was asked by Major Crowe to assist me in gathering material for the "Authentic History of the Ku Klux Klan," as there was an "unwritten" law of the Ku Klux Klan that no information of this kind be published except by the consent of the six originators.

Colonel Cunningham did more than any one else to overcome all kinds of unjust prejudice between the North and the South. One of his most conspicuous acts in this regard was in assisting me at St. Louis, Missouri, in 1904, at the Convention of the United Daughters of the Confederacy in having justice done Mrs. Leonora Rogers Schuyler, wife of Dr. Livingston Rowe Schuyler of New York City, who was unfairly treated before the Convention when she offered to establish a scholarship in Columbia University for the best paper on Southern history. Mrs. Schuyler had gained permission to establish in that leading college a prize scholarship for the study of Southern History from the Southern viewpoint, as a step towards bringing about a more complete understanding by the country at large of the truth of history as it was made in letters of blood from 1861 to 1865. The motion was made, as follows: "That the United Daughters of the Confederacy establish an annual scholarship of \$100 to be paid each year on December 1st for white students

only at Teachers' College, Columbia University, New York City, for the best essay on subjects pertaining to the South's part in the War between the States, the United Daughters of the Confederacy to appoint the Judges to examine these papers." This motion carried at the first session with great enthusiasm but at the next session of the Convention a delegate objected to the scholarship on the ground that it would go to a college where it was necessary to designate "for white students only." There was a very heated discussion and Mrs. Schuyler was requested to withdraw her motion. I wished to help her, and conferred with Colonel Cunningham, who always attended the Conventions of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, and he suggested to some of the delegates that they take Mrs. Schuyler's part in the discussion and, after doing so, she consented to postpone the subject for a future Convention but would not withdraw her motion. At the next annual Convention of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, in San Francisco, the motion was amended as above and was carried. Mrs. Meade, of Virginia, asked the privilege of seconding the motion, as her ancestor, Samuel Johnson, was the founder and first president of Kings College, now Columbia University. Great bitterness was engendered over this scholarship, as there was a division of sentiment among the women because of the necessity of saying for "white students only." On another occasion, when Colonel Cunningham was present, I said to one of the delegates who first opposed this

scholarship at St. Louis that I hoped some day to see Mrs. Schuyler President-General of the United Daughters of the Confederacy; and great objection was raised to this because she married a Northern man and had spent most of her mature womanhood in New York City. I said to these ladies that that was a narrow and unpatriotic view to take of a Daughter who was as much entitled as we were to that distinction, her father having served both in the Confederate Army and Confederate Congress. Colonel Cunningham reasoned with these ladies, with whom he had great influence, and congratulated me on the stand I had taken, and I replied to him that I would be glad if he would give me space in the *Confederate Veteran*, with the view of overcoming such prejudice, which he did, allowing me to publish Mrs. Schuyler's biography and picture, October, 1906 (*Confederate Veteran*), and for many years we worked together with the end in view of having this beautiful and graceful Southern woman, Mrs. Livingstone Rowe Schuyler, elected President-General of the National Order, and she was elected unanimously at the annual Convention in St. Louis, in 1921. Her first work for the United Daughters of the Confederacy was the establishment at Columbia University of this prize scholarship, and it was the beginning of the educational work which is today one of the most important branches of the activities of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, and we are indebted to Colonel Cunningham for this and many instances of break-

ing down prejudice against Southern women who had married Northern men, though it was not unfounded on the part of the splendid women who remained at the South, suffered all hardships, and built up the organization, known as the United Daughters of the Confederacy, and aided the Ku Klux Klan, for, they were sincere in the belief that at some crisis in our history a Southern woman who was married to a Northern man would not be in position to serve the United Daughters of the Confederacy without differing in opinion with her Northern husband. The gentle spirit of Colonel Cunningham was at all times at work on the minds of both the United Daughters of the Confederacy and the Confederate Veterans, to aid them in establishing a magnanimous attitude towards all Northerners, and I feel grateful to him for his untiring effort in behalf of Mrs. Livingston Rowe Schuyler's claim to the office of President-General of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, which position she now holds, and who is the first woman to have the distinction of holding this office while residing outside of the Southern States.

Colonel Cunningham collected a part of the money through the *Confederate Veteran* for the erection of the Sam Davis monument in Nashville, Tennessee, 1909, on Capitol Hill, superintended its erection, and was instrumental in the introduction of Sam Davis Day in the patriotic calendar of that State. Only a few times in human history has such a hero as Sam Davis crossed the horizon of fame, and one of the



most notable works of Colonel Cunningham was rescuing the name of Tennessee's boy hero from oblivion. Colonel Cunningham exemplified in his life the sentiment, "The bravest are the tenderest; the loving are the daring." He was doubtless the most widely known man in private life, and many distinguished men and women were his friends. The story of Sam Davis's sublime sacrifice and loyalty to duty will be just as bright and splendid at the end of thousands of years as it is today. It should be a great uplift to the men and women of all ages to have had such a hero in human form; the young Confederate soldier who was hanged because he would not betray his comrade, and who said: "I would rather die a thousand times than betray a friend." Sam Davis was a native of Pulaski, Tennessee, where the Ku Klux Klan originated, and where his body rests, after having been executed there, and this tragedy was one of the contributing causes of the Ku Klux Klan turning their social club into regulators, for it was ever present in the minds of some of them how narrowly Major James R. Crowe, who was tried with Sam Davis, as a spy, came to being hanged with him. He was one of the six men who originated the Ku Klux Klan. A monument, erected in 1906, now stands in the Court House yard of Pulaski, Tennessee, to Sam Davis.

### III.

#### ALABAMA.

#### ATHENS KU KLUX KLAN ORGANIZED.

The first Ku Klux Klan formed in Alabama was at Athens, Limestone County, which adjoins Giles County, Tennessee, where the Ku Klux Klan had originated, and was succeeding in controlling the negroes and carpet-baggers to a great extent.

In February 1866, Captain John C. Lester, of the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan was visiting Athens, Alabama, and in conversation with Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis of Limestone County, was asked about the Ku Klux Klan as its activities had reached the ears of Alabama men.

Captain Lester did not then admit that he was a member of the Ku Klux Klan, but said he had heard that conditions had become much better in Giles County since the advent of a club known by that name; and that many idle negroes who had been supported by the Freedmen's Bureau were now willing and anxious to work.

Colonel Davis remarked to Captain Lester that Athens needed assistance and he would be glad if he would find out more about it, and invite the Ku Klux Klan to help them.

Captain Lester returned to Pulaski and obtained

permission to organize a Ku Klux Klan at Athens, as Colonel Davis had applied for membership.

The immediate necessity for regulation at Athens had grown out of the fact that the idea of social equality between the whites and negroes had been suddenly raised there by white women who had been sent from the North to teach the negroes.

One of these white women was seen driving with a negro man on a footing of perfect equality, and it aroused the thinking men to consider that steps should be taken to maintain their determination that there should never be any social equality between the races in the South.

Suffrage had been denied the men of the seceding states by the Government at Washington, so legislative power to control this was not possible. The negro men were enfranchised and the state offices were filled with them and carpet-baggers who were "the scum that had been thrown to the surface in the great Civil War upheaval and which had settled upon the South."

This condition rankled in the hearts of the proud Southerners and it was therefore natural that they should turn to the source of relief of which they had heard only meagre details, the Ku Klux Klan, which had to some extent assisted the people of Tennessee.

Captain John C. Lester returned to Athens with permission to administer the Oath of the Ku Klux Klan to Col. L. R. Davis and with permission to call a meeting and initiate members. Frank O. McCord, Grand Cyclops of the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan, came



to this meeting which was held at "The Cove," three miles from Athens.

The first officers of the Athens, Ala., Ku Klux Klan (No. 2) were Grand Cyclops Dr. Nicholas D. Richardson; and the others, Robert A. McClellan, Robert Donnell, Fortunatus Wood, Paul L. Jones, John B. Floyd, T. J. Cox, Robert Beatty Mason, William Richardson, James B. Richardson, W. R. Pryor, William Cass Nichols, Thomas Carter, Henry J. Pepin and Edwin R. Richardson.

At this meeting at "The Cove" they discussed "white supremacy" and decided they would make it the chief business of the Ku Klux Klan.

A week later the Athens Ku Klux Klan held another meeting at "The Cove" and initiated hundreds of members who were incensed at the bold attempt of this white woman from the North to associate openly with negro men, thus offending the Southern people in their helplessness to legislate against such an evil condition.

"The Cove," the chosen spot for the meetings of the Ku Klux Klan, was a natural amphitheatre, then studded with thick pines which concealed it from the highway, in the center of which there is a deep, ice-cold spring. It was decided that they would take the negro man who had been associating with this white woman, to that spot, and inform him that such conduct should never occur again.

The negro, having been educated by his former master, was shrewd and intelligent, and said to the Ku Klux Klan that he was only obeying the white woman

when he hired the "buggy" and took her to ride through the streets of Athens, and said that if they would not send him on to the other world from which their spirits had returned, "so help me God, I will never be seen riding with a white lady again"—and that he would tell all the negroes that they must give up the idea of social equality in the South, which was being taught them by these white women of the North who had been sent there ostensibly as missionaries and teachers for the negroes.

The Ku Klux Klan then "baptised" him in the ice-cold spring, in the faith of "white supremacy" and sent him home through the darkness, shivering and cold; and that he was a man of his word is proved by the fact that he convinced the teachers from the North that the idea of social equality must be eliminated from the minds of the negroes there forever.

It was at this meeting that the Ku Klux Klan formulated the policy of "white supremacy" in the South as the work to be done by the Ku Klux Klan and they determined that social and political equality of the races should never be established in the Southern states. Knowing as they did that the Radicals intended by enfranchising the negroes, and disfranchising the white men, to secure control of the government of the Southern states and meant to uphold negro suffrage by military rule—"the Ku Klux Klan caused this scheme to fail completely."

Another necessity for regulation by the Ku Klux Klan at Athens grew out of the rumor that the military authorities controlling Alabama, had determined

to force the white citizens of Athens to send their children to a school which had been opened in the Baptist Church for the negroes, and was being taught by the above-mentioned white woman, who advocated social equality of the races, and who had said that the white children would be forced by bayonet rule to attend this school.

A military order to this effect had been contemplated by the commanding officer of the United States forces in that district, but through the efforts of Mrs. Childs, a northern woman, who was at that time, principal of the Athens Female Institute, this order was never issued.

Mrs. Childs had been at the head of this Institute for many years before the Civil War, it having been the second chartered college for women in the world (1843); and, she had raised it to a high standard of efficiency and was highly honored and much beloved by the thousands of Southern women who had graduated from this school and returned to their homes throughout the South to become the leaders of thought in their communities.

During the Civil War, when the Fair Ground's buildings, the Court House, and other public buildings were destroyed by fire by the Federal soldiers, Mrs. Childs appealed to them as a Northern woman to spare the handsome school building of the Athens Female Institute, and it is still one of the most beautiful school buildings for young women in the United States.

Many buildings have been added on the campus,

but the original building has been carefully preserved as it was when she was its dignified principal. The Ku Klux Klan guarded the Female Institute, determined that negroes should not be admitted, as the Military Commander had threatened to do.

The destruction of the public buildings at Athens was responsible for the holding of the meetings of the Ku Klux Klan in the open during the summer of 1866, and during the winter they began building bonfires for warmth, which led to many open-air demonstrations and rendered them more ghostly in appearance; being seen from a distance by negroes it caused their "nocturnal perambulations" to cease.

So once more, necessity which knows no law led to correcting one of the worst habits of the restless negroes who had been freed and had the idea that freedom meant license. Many of the older negroes were using their judgment and trying to assist in every way, the white people, to control the younger negroes who were a menace to all communities by their petty depredations and irresponsibility, though they were often led by mean white men whose own lawless deeds they hoped might be credited to the negroes.

The administration of civil law was only partially re-established in the South, after the War; the States were under arbitrary military rule, the carpet-baggers and negroes had been placed in the offices of both state and county, the white men of the South were prohibited from holding either state or national offices, and these conditions gave every incentive for the



growth and power of the Ku Klux Klan, which at that time was the only hope of the people of the South. The Ku Klux Klan was taking on new features not at first remotely contemplated by the Order—features which finally transformed the Ku Klux Klan into the world's greatest Regulators.

This rapid growth of the Ku Klux Klan led to closer affiliation and the Ku Klux Klans already formed felt the need of a leader sufficiently skilled to direct and control this vast body of men who were banded together to reconstruct the Southern states, which was not being fairly done by the government at Washington.

In April 1867 the Grand Cyclops, Frank O. McCord, and the five other founders of the Pulaski Klan realizing the need of a leader and of further expansion for the Ku Klux Klan, with the object in view of "White Supremacy" in the Southern states, sent an order for all the Klans to appoint delegates to meet in Nashville, Tennessee, in May 1867, to further the interests of the South, then so much in need of some power to improve the prevailing conditions.

The following incident is one of many which caused the Ku Klux Klan to change the "social club" which was their first intention, into a protective organization.

Three miles from Athens, a Confederate soldier, Mr. Ed. Tanner, who had been honorably discharged from the Confederate States Army some time before the surrender, because of ill-health, was called to his door, late one night, dragged into the highway, and

shot by negro soldiers, and his body pinned to the ground by a sharpened fence-rail, so the negro soldiers might ride over it.

This occurred on a beautiful moonlight night and in full view of the window where his wife, who had just given birth to a son a few hours before, was in bed. The physician, Dr. Nicholas Davis Richardson, who had attended the young mother, sent a faithful negro man who had been a former slave of the family, to Athens, to notify the Ku Klux Klan to come to this home for the purpose of capturing these murderers.

The plantation bells, which were a part of the equipment used for ringing at the noon hour, had been adopted by the Ku Klux Klan as signals of danger. Dr. Richardson rang the bell and each plantation took up the signal until the country had been notified.

I was a small girl at that time in the home of my father, Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis, whose plantation was on the extreme eastern limit of Limestone County. I was awakened in one of the upper bed-rooms by the ringing of the farm bell which stood in its high framework on the lawn. I ran down into the bed-room of my mother just in time to see my father, dressed in the Ku Klux regalia, leaning over her to kiss her good bye.

I had never seen him in his regalia before, and it frightened me; he took me in his arms and kissed me good-bye, and told me he was only masquerading and playing "dress up," for fun. I went to the window, and looking out was indelibly impressed by seeing



my father's horse, in its trappings of disguise, being held for him by a faithful negro man, Antony, who never left the family until his death a few years ago, and who has retold this episode to me many times.

I watched my father out of the gate-way on this bright moonlight night and saw many hundreds of the Ku Klux Klan in their white robes, filing over the hill to join him, and follow the signaling bell towards Athens, and on to the home where the fiendish deed had been done.

The negro soldiers who had murdered Mr. Tanner, were pursued by the Ku Klux Klan to the Tennessee River, ten miles away, and were almost overtaken at Decatur, where they made an effort after dismounting, to cross the railroad on foot. They encountered an incoming train and jumped from the bridge into the river, where some of them escaped to the opposite shore, while several of them were drowned.

The murder of Mr. Tanner and other outrages by the negro soldiers was the means of strengthening the Ku Klux Klan in their determination to press on towards some form of relief from such outrages, and caused the augmenting of their numbers by many thousands.

The night's display of their numbers when they were attempting to arrest the murderers of Mr. Tanner proved salutary for Limestone County. The Union League, the Radical Order, which was giving much trouble, changed its severity, and, through fear of the Ku Klux Klan after their display on that memorable night, caused the negroes to make more

progress in the next few months in needed lessons of self-control and industry, than they would have done in as many years.

Another cause of the Ku Klux Klan's growth was falsehoods told by J. W. Alvord, Inspector of Schools and Finances, Freedmen's Bureau, who when asked by the Congressional Committee on Reconstruction, what was the general feeling towards the government of the United States said: "It is hostile, it seems to me, in the great majority of the southern people, I mean that part of them who were in the rebellion.

"There is evidently no regret for the rebellion, but rather a defense of it. They everywhere defend the principles on which the rebellion was commenced. They seem to think that peace was brought about by an arrangement which allowed them the equal condition of belligerents and in possession of all they had previously of government privileges; and, that they shall be admitted as states into the Union, and they complained bitterly of the treatment they are receiving in being kept out."

When Mr. Alvord was asked by the Committee: "What great object do they seem to contemplate in their being readmitted into Congress by their representatives?" he said: "They supposed that by readmission they could get political power and obtain again the supremacy which they once had, and, with the exception of slavery, they expect to be still a prosperous and dominant portion of our government." When asked if the southern people had the

power, would they put the negroes back into slavery, he answered: "They would."

He said, "Everywhere the negroes were refused the privilege of buying land and of claiming their rights as free men." Mr. Alvord went all over the South stirring up strife among the races. He was at Athens, Alabama, and founded the negro school in the Baptist church and tried to force the white people to send their children to school with the negroes.

He said to this Committee: "All sorts of evil is predicted by the white people if negroes have learning, and the 'poor whites' hate the idea of the negroes being able to read and write when they can not. Much fraud has been practiced on the negroes by their old masters." A greater falsehood was never stated by any one.

General James H. Clanton of Montgomery was the first Grand Dragon of the Realm of Alabama Ku Klux Klan, and continued in this capacity until his death, when General John T. Morgan was elected in his place, and served until 1876. The Ku Klux Klan in 1877 was led by General Edmund W. Pettus as Grand Dragon of the Realm.

General Morgan was elected to the United States Senate by the Ku Klux Klan in 1876, and served until his death in 1907.

In 1867 Bishop Richard H. Wilmer, who was a close friend of General Morgan, the Second Dragon of the Realm of Alabama, went to England and there he saw Judah P. Benjamin who had been a member of the Confederate States Cabinet.

Among other things he told him of the Ku Klux Klan and the power it was exerting, and the necessity for keeping up the ghostly idea that the negroes might be controlled, and told him of the scarcity of suitable dry-goods and horses for the use of the Ku Klux Klan.

Mr. Benjamin's interest in the Ku Klux Klan was so aroused that he borrowed money and gave it to Bishop Wilmer to buy horses, saddles, fire-arms, and other necessities for the Ku Klux Klan.

Several years after the work of the Ku Klux Klan had been completed, a fund was raised by the women of the South, by festivals, oyster-suppers, charades and other entertainments, that this money might be returned to Mr. Benjamin. I helped to raise this money.

Mr. Judah P. Benjamin was a Jew, born in 1812 on one of the British West India Islands while his parents were on their way to the United States. He attended Yale College. He was a lawyer in New Orleans, La., when he was elected to the United States Senate, where Mr. Jefferson Davis met him and of whom he said "Mr. Benjamin had very high reputation as a lawyer and my acquaintance with him in the Senate impressed me with the lucidity of his intellect, his systematic habits, and capacity for labor. He was, therefore, invited to the post of Attorney General in the cabinet of the Confederate States of America." He was later made Secretary of War, then Secretary of State—and served to the end of the Confederacy, and was with Jefferson Davis when



they crossed the Savannah River, after the night march from Abbeville, S. C., after the fall of the Confederacy. Mr. Benjamin escaped after leaving Mr. Davis and went to Bermuda and then to England. He became a Queen's Counsel in London and was highly esteemed as an English barrister. Mr. Burton N. Harrison who was with Jefferson Davis when he was captured said it was best for the Confederacy and Mr. Davis that he did not escape with Mr. Benjamin, as having been a prisoner of the United States Government, and the fact that he was never brought to trial on any of the charges was sufficient vindication. Mr. Benjamin became very wealthy in England and Mrs. Jefferson Davis told me that he often sent her money to relieve the needy among his friends in the United States, as well as the assistance rendered the Ku Klux Klan, as the South had been plundered so as to render this help necessary; for the South was being financially ruined by the frauds perpetrated by the United States Treasury Department in their efforts to sell all the property subject to seizure under the Confiscation Acts of Congress; cotton was confiscated and a commission of 25% was paid the agents. The Ku Klux Klan Minority Report of the subcommittee on "Affairs in the Late Insurrectionary States" stated that three million bales of cotton were confiscated, and that the government received only 114,000 bales.

The United States government not only confiscated all cotton raised by the *women* of the South with the help of the still faithful negroes after the close of the



Civil War, when most of the men had come home sick and exhausted from the battlefields, but they confiscated mules, wagons, farming implements and even the small quantities of foods they had been able to store for themselves.

This so embittered the women that they held nothing but contempt for the government at Washington, and while the men tried to keep their part of the contract embodied in their paroles, the women were willing for them to go back to war rather than submit to this condition. So the women hailed the Ku Klux Klan as they would have done the army as a source of protection to them.

The women took the clothes off of their backs and the sheets off of their beds to make the ghostly regalia for the Ku Klux Klan. There were no stocks of goods in the South as the merchants had no credit or money, and when all the white material available was used, the women converted their "Dolly Varden" and other bright colored calico into costumes for them.

At this time the Alabama Ku Klux Klan spread very rapidly, but the headquarters was always kept at Athens.

It is important to note here that Alabama, in its own sovereignty, had abolished slavery within its borders, and General James H. Clanton, who was the wise and fearless leader of the Democratic Party, from its reorganization after the war, until the day of his death, advocated this measure of the abolition of slavery.

Under the authority of the convention that adopted

this measure, an election was held on Nov. 20, 1865, and ratified the amendments to the Constitution of the United States, excepting the 14th, which deprived vast numbers of the Southerners of the right of citizenship.

The Legislature rejected the 14th Amendment for the Southern people considered this suicide. The Federal government was duly notified of the proceedings and Governor Parsons, who was head of the provisional government of Alabama, received a letter from Secretary of State Seward, which said:

"In the judgment of the president, the time had arrived when the care and the conduct of the affairs of Alabama could be remitted to the Constitutional authorities chosen by the people thereof without danger to the peace and safety of the United States," and directions were given to Governor Parsons to transfer to the Governor of Alabama elected by the people all papers and property in his hands.

On Dec. 10th, 1865, Robert N. Patton was inaugurated Governor.

Governor Parsons was a native of New York but had long been a resident of Talladega, Ala. He was a Whig and a Union man, and a man of fine personality and much dignity of character. As evidence of the confidence the people had in him, they elected former Governor Parsons United States Senator, for the term ending March 3, 1871.

The same legislature elected George S. Houston for the term ending 1867 and John A. Winston for the term of six years commencing March 4, 1867. At

the election in November, 1865, C. C. Langdon was elected to Congress from the first district, the second George C. Freeman, the third Cullen A. Battle, the fourth, J. W. Taylor, the fifth, Burwell T. Pope, and from the sixth, Thomas J. Foster. Then came the terrific shock which convulsed the South for these chosen men were not permitted to take their seats in Congress and the State was not represented until 1868.

A military commander was appointed and directed to institute military tribunals instead of judicial, with the power to inflict unusual punishments, excepting only death. He was given the power to displace any official and appoint his successor, but this same act provided that military rule should cease when a convention of the people thereof should frame, and the voters adopt a constitution ratifying the amendment to the Federal constitution which conferred suffrage on the negroes.

The new constitution was to be framed by delegates to be chosen by the votes of all citizens of legal age excepting those disfranchised by the 14th Amendment, and it was to be ratified by a majority of voters registered by the military commander. Under the Reconstruction Act of 1867, Alabama became a part of the military district comprising itself and the States of Georgia and Florida.

The military commander called a convention to frame the constitution. When the election was held the polls were kept open five days, but the white men refused to vote. This gathering of men was stig-

matized as the "carpet-baggers" convention, as the men who composed it were corrupt and ignorant, and not even citizens of the state of Alabama.

Samuel Hale, a brother of Senator Hale, one of the few Union men and Republicans in Sumpter County, Ala., said: "So far as I am acquainted with them, they are worthless vagabonds, homeless, houseless, drunken knaves." Mr. Hale said, "this election was as shameless a fraud as was ever perpetrated upon the face of the earth."

After four years of warfare the difficulties of the Southerners were appalling.

Cotton was one of the principal resources left to the people after the war. It was in great demand at high prices, and would have saved the people of the South from bankruptcy, but an unconstitutional tax of 3 cents a pound was placed on it, and then 2½ cents. At the close of the war there were five million bales of cotton stored in the South which would have been worth in Liverpool five hundred million dollars.

Only a small part of this cotton was owned by the Confederate States government, and that part of it was turned over to General E. R. S. Camby, U. S. A., by General E. Kirby Smith, C. S. A., on May 24, 1865. Then came a swarm of spies and agents sent by the Treasury Department and the seizure of cotton was indiscriminate; and when private ownership was proven, a toll was exacted before it was released.

The Treasury Department ordered all the cotton from the Gulf States shipped to Simeon Draper,



United States Cotton Agent in New York City; and that seized west of the Mississippi River, in Alabama and Georgia, to William T. Mellen, Cincinnati. "Simeon Draper, when he became cotton agent was a bankrupt, and he died a multi-millionaire."

Those who have advocated the refunding of this tax on raw cotton collected by the United States government after the Civil War was over from 1865 to 1868, were, all the Southern members of Congress of both parties, State Legislatures who sent memorials, distinguished citizens, commercial bodies, and eminent counsel, whose arguments were that the tax was not uniform; because, it was imposed without the consent of the Southern people, and when they were wholly unrepresented in Congress; and, because, the men who raised cotton paid the same taxes that others paid, and then this extra tax on cotton which caused many of them to sell their plantations in desperation.

This tax was  $2\frac{1}{2}$  to 3 cents per pound from 1866 to 1868, and the law exempting the cotton from taxation was passed March 3, 1868. Of this illegal tax, Alabama paid \$10,388,072.10, Georgia paid \$11,897,094.98, Louisiana \$10,098,501.00, and the other states paid less than this. There were sixteen states, some of them Western and Northern states which were included in this unjust tax, because they had bought the cotton, and had taken it to these states before the law was passed.

Senator Lee Overman of North Carolina, and other Senators and Representatives from the South, have introduced many bills in Congress for the restoration



of this cotton tax to the men who owned it, or to their heirs. There have been test cases made before the Supreme Court which were decided adversely to the rightful owners of this cotton in question, and at present efforts are being made to recover this sum which is \$68,072,388.99.

“Confiscation is a method by which a conquerer robs his foes and rewards his friends. All confiscation is robbery.” These words were used by Hon. John W. Chandler in reply to Mr. Thaddeus Stevens on his arguments in the House of Representatives on the Southern Confiscation Bill under which so many illegal acts were performed and which caused the Secretary of the Treasury in 1866 to say of the South, “Even in their deplorable condition, more than two-thirds of our exports last year consisted of their products and it is the crop of the present year, 1867, small though it is, that is to save us from ruinous indebtedness to Europe.” But Congress would not listen to his appeal to repeal the law.

At this time the New York Chamber of Commerce memorialized Congress against this unjust tax on raw cotton, and said “taxation without representation is tyranny, that the cotton tax was a violation of the Constitution and, that the proposed increase to 5 cents a pound by Congress, lacked an impartiality which was calculated to provoke hostility at the South, and to excite in all honest minds of the North, that such a purpose should not prevail.

“A discriminating tax which tends to make the rich at the North richer, and the poor at the South poorer

operates as a discouragement to those who with heavy hearts but honest endeavor strive to regain their lost fortunes.

“If it be true that when one member suffers all the members suffer, the committee appointed to make this memorial would urge a more moderate tax than now proposed, not in the interest of the South alone but for the common good of all the states in the Union.”

Many people in the South who were the victims of this tyranny “taxation without representation” still hope that the United States Government will yet refund this illegal tax.

Fifty million dollars worth of cotton was shipped to Simeon Draper, and the United States government only got fifteen million of it. Thus the Southern people were impoverished and their property turned over to these unscrupulous scoundrels.

One duty of the Ku Klux Klan for many years was to build gins in the dense forests, haul the cotton there, gin it, hide it and guard it. Had it not been for the Ku Klux Klan who saved what cotton they could secretly, the people would have died of starvation.

Another cause of irritation which caused collisions in Alabama was the offensive conduct of the Federal soldiers in the garrisons. In Tuscaloosa, Greensboro and Eutaw and many other towns throughout the state, they were insulting to the former soldiers of the Confederacy, United States flags were stretched across the streets so pedestrians would have to pass under them, especially the women.

As a result of these occurrences the Ku Klux Klan

was organized in Greensboro and the members were to assemble at the ringing of a certain bell. The soldiers attempted once to force a woman in Tuscaloosa to walk under the flag and Ryland Randolph seized a sabre and challenged the commander to mortal combat. The officer refused to fight and never repeated this insult again.

To resume the subject of the election on the constitution it is well to comment on the perfidy of Congress of imposing upon the people of Alabama in violation of its own solemn covenant, a constitution which they had rejected in a lawful manner.

The fact that the government imposed the same penalty on men who had opposed with all their abilities the severance of Alabama from the Union, embittered men who had been Whigs and would perhaps have preferred the Republican Party had they not been driven towards the Democratic Party.

There were thousands of men in Alabama who believed that the Democrats had precipitated secession without permitting the people to 'vote on the ordinance. They believed with Colonel Nicholas Davis, who wrote the amendment to the secession ordinance to submit it to the people, that had this been done, secession would have been defeated. Northern Alabama was so loyal to the Union that it even thought of separating that section from the remainder of the State and fighting it out on its own lines.

But when Fort Sumpter was threatened these same men fought with the Confederate forces. In Alabama there were many men who were Whigs and

Union men who had no liking for the Democratic Party; but they saw nothing but a perpetuation of negro supremacy in Alabama, should Republican leaders be allowed there.

Alabama elected Governor R. B. Lindsay who had defeated W. R. Smith. Governor Lindsay demanded the seal and papers of the state and Smith refused to deliver them. A trial was set for three o'clock in the afternoon and Governor Smith was ordered to appear in person in the court and show why he refused to deliver the property.

Governor Smith was informed by General Edmund W. Pettus, who was on that day leading the Ku Klux Klan for General Morgan, that every town in the state was sending its Ku Klux Klan to Montgomery, that every available locomotive in the state had been requisitioned, and that the Ku Klux Klan was entrained and side-tracked at every station along every railroad.

The court-room was already crowded with strange men, which caused much excitement and Governor Smith did not like their appearance there. He did not relish the idea of coming before that formidable audience, "contesting the right of the people's representatives to assume the offices to which they had elected them." So he held a conference with General Pettus and told him he would yield and therefore turn the papers of the state over to Governor Lindsay.

In 1876 when Governor George S. Houston was re-elected, his home being at Athens, the Ku Klux



Klan had a great torchlight parade in celebration, of the redeemed South, as well as Alabama.

The Court House had just been completed, after having been burned during the war by Federal soldiers, and Captain William Richardson was asked to raise the "Stars and Stripes" for the first time since he took that flag down in 1861, when he went with his State, after secession.

He had been crippled by a wound in a limb at the battle of Chickamauga and his two brothers took the flag, and unfurled it to the breeze from the cupola—and when Edwin R. Richardson and James B. Richardson were seen with the flag, a great cheer went up for Captain Richardson.

Captain John Buchanan Floyd, a Lictor of the Ku Klux Klan of Athens, Alabama, was born at the family home, Brookfield, near Lynchburg, Va., April 28, 1838. He was educated in private schools of Lynchburg and the Virginia Military Institute. He was on a visit to North Alabama when Virginia seceded. He joined the Confederate States army and was elected lieutenant. He was promoted to Captain in Wheeler's command. After the War he returned to Alabama to look after lands he had there and found the most desolate conditions.

In December 1867, he married Frances Maria Harris, daughter of Major John R. Harris of Limestone County. On the maternal side of them both they were the descendants of Orlando Jones (1687-1719), a celebrated Colonial lawyer of Virginia who was a son of Rev. Roland Jones (1640-1688) who



was the first rector of Bruton Parish Church at Williamsburg, Virginia, which was the Colonial capitol of Virginia.

Many prominent people of the South are descended from the two grand-daughters of Orlando Jones. The eldest, Martha Dandridge, married first Colonel Custis, and second General George Washington.

The other grand-daughter, Frances Barbour Jones, married Captain John Jones (no relation of hers), who was a gallant officer in the "Light Brigade" of Harry Lee, father of Robert E. Lee; and was the great-grandmother of John Buchanan Floyd, and Frances Maria Harris, who married each other.

The children of Captain and Mrs. John B. Floyd are as follows: Elizabeth Harris Floyd, married Edward Fletcher of Madison, Ala., and died leaving one son; Annie West Floyd married William Harvey Gillespie, a son of C. M. Gillespie, who was a Ku Klux Klansman. Schuyler Harris Floyd married Mittie Sherrod. He lives in Birmingham, Ala.; and also Mrs. Gillespie; Ellen Stith Floyd married John Hurtzler. She is a widow and lives in Birmingham. Ida Isabel Floyd married Thomas H. Hopkins, son of Mr. and Mrs. Frank Hopkins. Mrs. Frank Hopkins was a descendent of Governor Thomas Bibb, first Governor of Alabama. John Buchanan Floyd Jr., married Hibernia Wise, daughter of Arthur Wise of Virginia and Lucy Harris of Alabama. Florence Lee Floyd, unmarried; Charles Perkins Floyd, unmarried; Nicholas Nathaniel Floyd, unmarried. Captain Floyd was one of the Couriers be-

tween the Ku Klux Klan headquarters and the Virginia Ku Klux Klan.

Fortunatus Shackelford Wood was born Jan. 26, 1838, died May 14, 1914. He was a member of Co. E., 26th Alabama Regiment, Confederate States Army commanded by Captain James Henry Malone. Later this was changed to 50th then to 22nd Regiment with W. D. Chaddick's Battalion 1st Alabama Volunteers. He was paroled May 1, 1865 at Greensboro, N. C. He was a member of the Home Guards (Athens, Ala.) known as the Limestone Rebels which became the 26th Alabama Regiment. Mr. Wood was a very progressive and highly esteemed citizen of his native town, Athens, Alabama. He was the Grand Magi of the Athens Ku Klux Klan. He is survived by two sons Mr. George Wood, Mr. William Wood and a charming and gifted daughter, a "song-bird of the South," Miss Elizabeth Wood (New York City).

General John Tyler Morgan, Second Grand Dragon of the Realm of Alabama (Invisible Empire), was born June 20, 1824, at Athens, Tennessee, and died June 11, 1907, at Washington, D. C.; was buried at his home Selma, Alabama, and was followed to his grave by thousands of grateful Alabamians, and other people from all over the United States who realized that their great champion of human liberty was gone.

General Morgan was descended from clan Morgan of Wales and his grandfather came to this country and settled in Connecticut and afterwards went to

Tennessee. His father was born at Saratoga, N. Y., one night when George Washington was visiting the family, and he was named for George Washington.

His mother was Frances Irby of Virginia, a woman of rare mental attainments, who taught her boy almost entirely from memory in the absence of schools and books which she could not always obtain for him. She required him to memorize entire books, such as Pope's Essay on Man, John Wesley's Sermons and others; and in this way he cultivated a memory which was of great advantage to him through life; his fund of knowledge, and his ready use of it, was the astonishment of those with whom he was associated throughout his entire life.

He was sent to England on one occasion for our government as our Senator, and a Lord of England in conversing with him, was so impressed with his marvelous command of facts, that he said "I wish you would tell me what University you attended in America."

Senator Morgan replied "I never was on a University campus but once, and that was during the Civil War when I was hard pressed by the Yankee soldiers, and took refuge, and made my barracks out of the Mary and William College in Virginia. It is an ordinary thing in America for men to succeed without a University education."

He was a delegate from Dallas County to the secession convention in 1861, and while opposed to secession, he finally voted for the ordinance, his de-

bates in this convention were equal in brilliancy of the great secession orator Wm. L. Yancey.

He abided by the majority, and enlisted as a private in Company G., Fifth Alabama Regiment, Confederate States Army, and was elected major of that regiment. He resigned this commission, and returned to Alabama, and equipped a mounted regiment almost at his own expense, and was made Colonel. He was ordered to report to General Nathan B. Forrest. Colonel Morgan was promoted Brigadier General, and in recognition of his military genius General Robert E. Lee personally notified him of his promotion.

At the close of the War between the States General Morgan returned to Alabama, and begun his masterly effort to rehabilitate his devastated State. When the iniquitous reconstruction measures were forced upon Alabama, he came out boldly for "white supremacy" and State sovereignty.

He was Grand Dragon of the Realm of Alabama Ku Klux Klan (after the death of General Jas. H. Clanton, who first held this position) until he was elected United States Senator in 1876, and then General Edmund W. Pettus was made Grand Dragon.

When the "Grandfather Clause" was included in the new Constitutions of the Southern States which restored "white supremacy," General Morgan was called upon to make the most tremendous effort of his public life, to defeat the infamous "force bill" which was designed to enforce the Fourteenth and Fifteenth



Amendments to the United States Constitution by acts of Congress.

The resolution leading to this was introduced by Mr. Geo. Pritchard, a Republican. Senator Morgan's debate against this bill was the crowning act of his career for the good of the South and the whole country. By his eloquence and logic, he won over enough Northern Senators to defeat the measure, and Colonel Thomas M. Owen in his "History of Alabama" says:

"No one of his great public services won for him greater gratitude from his people than his defeat of a movement which would have, if made effective by law, brought back to the Southern States all the disorders and horrors of the reconstruction period, and perhaps another Civil War, for Senator Morgan said in his debate in the Senate 'such a measure would abolish the state as to its rightful sovereign powers and would remand it to the condition of our organized Territories, all of whose laws may be repealed by Congress, and all of whose officials may be placed under the power of appointment and removed by the President.' " This debate was in 1900, and not long after this I was in conversation with Senator Morgan, and thanked him for his success in preventing the passage of the "force bill," and he smiled and said, "I was so excited that I came very near telling them on the Senate floor that I was a Ku Klux Klansman, and that if that bill passed, there would be a million of them to rise up against it."

I then asked him many questions regarding the Ku



Klux Klan in Alabama, and am indebted to him for a great deal of information stated in this history. Senator Morgan was the first man I ever heard make a public speech.

When I was quite a small girl, he made a speech in the court house yard at Athens, Alabama, urging the people not to leave Alabama, as many were so discouraged that they were seeking homes elsewhere on account of the threatened laws for the amalgamation of the races, and of mixed schools, and other depressing measures imposed upon the State by the General Government. General Sterling Price went to Mexico to found a colony, but General Wood of Mississippi said in a newspaper, "Better submit and endure wrongs than be exiles in a foreign land," and he returned home.

General Morgan said in this speech that some day there would be a canal connecting the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans; that the Muscle Shoals in the Tennessee River would be developed by the United States Government; that great ocean-going steamers would ply between the Ohio River and Chattanooga, and that Alabama would be among the leading states of the Union.

He turned to my father, Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis, who was seated beside him on the rostrum, and with deep emotion in his voice and tears streaming down his face, he said "As for my part I will stay and I feel sure that my friend 'Rip Davis' will be among the number who will stay with my beloved state of Alabama," and with the people cheering until his

voice was almost drowned, he closed his immortal speech with the words "Alabama, Here We Rest."

Many men and women rushed forward, and grasped his hand, and promised him that they would join his patriots who would redeem Alabama, and forever defend it against every foreign foe. Senator Morgan was a very handsome and distinguished man in appearance, and was as gentle as a woman in his dealings with everyone.

From this speech until the day of his death, he was my ideal statesman, and I never missed an opportunity to hear his debates in the senate of the United States, where he was a credit to Alabama and to the whole country. He was the "father of the isthmian canal idea," and championed the route through the valley of the San Juan River, and across Lake Nicaragua, as it was the most practical and healthful way.

He had given exhaustive study to the subject of slides and other obstacles to be overcome in the building of the canal, and he was deeply disappointed when the Panama route was selected, but he was so great a statesman that he yielded his views and accepted the inevitable and worked on until his death for the canal, but did not live to see it completed.

Senator Morgan's fame is too well known to require any further outline of his work in this book, but I shall only say that he was the greatest Senator Alabama has ever had, for no matter was too small for his attention that concerned the humblest of his constituents and no task too great for him to attempt in the interest of his State and the country at large.

Miss Mary Morgan is the only child who survives her illustrious father.

The Ku Klux Klan of Eufaula was commanded by Mr. James Lawrence Pugh who was born in Georgia, and died at Washington after serving sixteen years as United States Senator from Alabama. He was a Representative in Congress, and resigned when Alabama seceded from the Union.

He entered the Confederate states army in 1861, and was in Company A, Alabama Infantry, and acted as escort when Jefferson Davis was inaugurated president of the Confederate States of America. Mr. Pugh was a member of the First and Second Confederate Congresses and was Grand Titan of the Ku Klux Klan, Realm of Alabama.

While in the United States Senate, and as chairman of the Judiciary Committee of the Senate in the Fifty-third and Fifty-fourth Congresses, his report on the Tenure of Office Act was said to have been one of the greatest of state papers written within forty years, as it involved all the principles of law on which the impeachment charges against President Andrew Johnson were based. This case was of George Dustin, a United States District Attorney, who was removed from office by President Grover Cleveland. Mr. Pugh was the father of Mrs. Alfred W. Cochran of New York City, who is a very charming woman.

The Grand Cyclops of the Huntsville Klan was Colonel William M. Lowe, who told the Committee of Congress Investigating Affairs in Insurrectionary

States "that the Ku Klux were said to be the Confederate dead who had risen from the dead and were incapable of being wounded or killed and could drink wells of water as they had been *where it was very warm.*" He said: "After a great civil convulsion such as ours was, the people being in apprehension that the very foundations of society would be broken up, was the excuse for the Ku Klux Klan." When he was asked if Colonel Nicholas Davis was a member of the Union League, he said, "he was not and was very hostile to it." In this distorted, untruthful report of this Committee, it is stated that Colonel Lowe said that Colonel Davis was a *scalawag*. There never was a greater falsehood ever penned, for, had it been true Colonel Lowe would never have said such a disrespectful thing about his brother-in-law who had been a father to him, and, in whose home he lived at that time.

This falsehood was put in this report about Colonel Davis being a scalawag because he had prosecuted so many "carpet-baggers" and often secured convictions, and the Federal authorities at Huntsville would dismiss the prisoners; then Colonel Davis would report to the Ku Klux Klan, of which he was a member, to drive these criminals from the state if they could not be properly punished.

Colonel William M. Lowe, when asked if he knew of any disguised men taking guns away from negroes, said: "On Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis' plantation the *spurious* Ku Klux Klan, in disguise, had attempted to take guns away from two negro men



who had been Colonel Davis' former slaves, named Archie and Alex, and that Col. Davis and Capt. DeWitt Clinton Davis took their guns to defend their negroes and with their help unmasked the men and found they were impostors and were imitating the Ku Klux Klan."

Colonel Lowe said, "there was no more loyal Southerner" than Colonel Nicholas Davis and although he was a Union man, before secession, he followed the destiny of his State. He was a member of the Secession Convention at Montgomery in 1861 and wrote the resolution asking that the ordinance of secession be submitted to the people for ratification as his section of Alabama was opposed to secession. He served in the Confederate States Army.

Colonel Nicholas Davis never held any public office after the Civil War and therefore could not be placed in the category of "scalawags" as has been done by the reconstruction committee of Congress. Colonel Nicholas Davis died from exhaustion in 1874 while defending a man for his life. He was a brilliant lawyer and a much beloved citizen of Huntsville.

Captain William Richardson, judicial officer of the Ku Klux Klan, stated before the sub-committee on "Condition of Affairs in the Southern States" holding hearings at Huntsville, Alabama, Oct. 12, 1871, that he was not in favor of secession in Alabama and did not approve of the plan by which it was done. He said he thought it would have been voted down if it had been submitted to the people, as there was great bitterness in his county of Limestone upon the man-



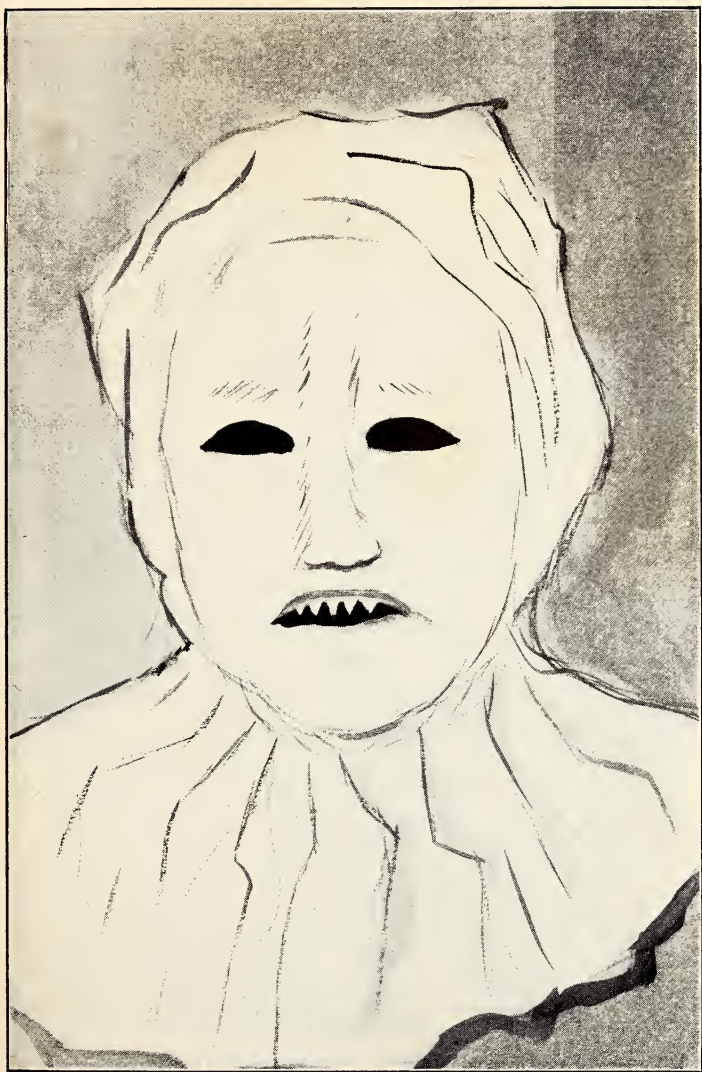
ner in which the ordinance of secession was carried through the convention.

He said he made a speech in the Cumberland Presbyterian Church at Athens, Limestone County, in protest against secession, and his father too was opposed to secession. (Capt. Richardson told me a few years before his death that he still had that Union speech that he made on Feb. 22, 1861.)

Alabama having seceded on Jan. 11, 1861, and the feeling generally in North Alabama was opposed to secession—as a further evidence of his Union sentiment he suggested and helped to put up the “Stars and Stripes” on the cupola of the court house at Athens where it stayed until he decided to take it down and espouse the cause of his State by entering the Confederate States Army and the eleven men beside himself who had put the flag up all went into the Confederate service.

Capt. Richardson when asked why he went into the Confederate service when he so ardently wished the Union preserved, replied: “I afterward entered the army as a Confederate soldier, freely and from my own choice, for the reason that it had then become a question whether I should side with my own people or whether I should fight in the army of the United States.

“Upon that question I had no hesitancy whatever. As long as there was a possibility, so far as my then limited intelligence in political matters could discern, of the Union being preserved and kept together, entertaining merely the sentiments of my father—hav-



This is a picture of the mask worn by the organizers of the original Ku Klux Klan, loaned by the Archives of History of Alabama.

(Drawn for this History by Mrs. John Moore, Montgomery, Alabama.)



ing his views reflected upon me—I was for its preservation and maintenance. I went into the Confederate army because it had become an actual and real fact that there was no Union, so far as Alabama was concerned; that it was gone, and that I either had to go up North or stay South; the latter I had no hesitancy in doing.

“When Mr. Lincoln made a call for 75,000 troops, my feelings upon that subject were changed; there had been an entire change in my feelings upon that subject after that call for 75,000 troops.

“I was no longer in favor of maintaining the Union. I was in favor of abiding by my State and following her destiny. When asked about the Loyal League he said: “In regard to the organization called the Loyal League, all I can tell you of that organization, a Radical organization fomenting trouble in the South, is from what I heard—nothing that I know of my personal knowledge.

“I know to the best of my information and belief that such an organization existed. I knew of its President. He was Daniel H. Bingham.

“I remember that they used to meet in an old drug store on the corner of the square in Athens; that was in 1866; they would meet once a week. At that time they met in the day. I could see them going up into the house. I remember a disturbance that took place when they met there.

“The object of the League, so far as I understood, was to get the colored people into it and instill into them animosity and prejudice against the native

Southern white people, and to thereby insure their votes for the radical party." Captain Richardson said that in a letter to the *Huntsville Advocate* July 25, 1870, Governor Smith, a republican, denounced other "carpet-baggers" for uttering falsehoods about the South, and said of J. D. Sibly, a "carpet-bag" Sheriff: "My candid opinion is that Sibly does not want to execute the law, because that would put down crime, and crime is his life's blood. He would like very much to have a Ku Klux outrage every week to assist him in keeping up strife between the whites and blacks, that he might be more certain of the votes of the latter.

"He would like to have a few colored men killed every week to furnish a semblance of truth to Senator Spencer's libels upon the people of the State generally. I speak in strong terms of condemnation of the conduct of two white men in Tuskegee a few days ago in advising colored men to resist the authority of the Sheriff; and these are not Ku Klux, but are Republicans."

Capt. Richardson told the sub-committee at Huntsville that he knew positively that the Ku Klux Klan did not start the riot at Huntsville when Silas Thurlow was killed and others wounded; that he was on the opposite side of the court square, and was talking with the Ku Klux Klan and persuading them to move on.

He told me a few years before his death that the Ku Klux who were in Huntsville that night were men he knew to be of the highest character, and were out



only to keep order if such a thing were possible. He said he persuaded them to return home which they did near daylight and as they rode away his brother, Dr. Nicholas Davis Richardson, whispered in his ear that he must go back to his patients and rode away.

General Jas. H. Clanton, Grand Dragon of the Invisible Empire, Alabama Realm, was with them that night and returned to my father's home twelve miles from Huntsville. They were brothers-in-law. General Clanton was a very gallant soldier and a very distinguished lawyer. He had been a Whig and was opposed to secession but when the War began he cast his lot with the people of his State, and after the War he led the men of his State in forming the Conservative Party into which he thought he could gather all shades of political opinion that was for the good of Alabama. He had great powers of leadership and is described by Col. Hillary A. Herbert in "Why the Solid South" as "a great man of phenomenal courage, of great directness of thought and speech, and singular magnetism." He met a tragic death on the streets of Knoxville, Tennessee, when he was shot by Mr. David Nelson when they had a heated argument over a law-suit on which they were on opposite sides. His death was a great shock and loss to his State, coming as it did, at the most crucial time in her history.

Captain Wm. Richardson and General Clanton were warm personal friends, and he knew that night at Huntsville that all would be well while the Ku

Klux Klan was being led by him and his brother, Dr. Richardson.

William Richardson was born May 8, 1839, at Athens, Alabama, and died at Atlantic City, May 31, 1914, and was buried at his home city of Huntsville, Alabama, where a large concourse of citizens followed him to the grave. He was educated at Florence Wesleyan University, and entered the service of the Confederate States Army in 1861.

He was severely wounded at Shiloh, and again at Chickamauga which wounds gave him great pain during the remainder of his life. He represented his County of Limestone in the Legislature in 1867. He then moved to Madison County where he was Probate Judge for several years.

He was Democratic elector for the State at large. He was a brilliant lawyer specializing in criminal law until he was elected to Congress as representative from the Eighth Alabama District from 1900 until his death. He took a prominent part in important legislation such as the Panama Canal, and the Department of Labor. He is survived by one son, William Richardson, Nashville, Tennessee, and four daughters.

Dr. Nicholas Davis Richardson, Grand Cyclops of the Athens Ku Klux Klan, was born November 30, 1832, at Athens, Alabama, and died January 3, 1895, at Nashville, Tennessee, and was buried at Athens, Alabama. He was a son of Wm. Richardson and Ann Ridley (Davis) Richardson; a grandson of Nicholas Davis and Martha Pleasants

(Hargrave) Davis of Virginia, who came to Alabama in 1817, and settled in Limestone County, and built them a magnificent home called "Walnut Grove" where they brought with them the traditional Virginia hospitality.

Dr. Nicholas Davis Richardson was educated at the John Frazer Academy in his native town, at LaGrange College, University of Virginia, and Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, Penn. He was a devout Methodist, and a high Mason. He entered the Confederate States Army in 1861, and was Surgeon of the Twenty-sixth Alabama, and Fiftieth Regiments until the close of the war in 1865.

He returned to his home at Athens, and resumed the practice of his profession, and was the most beloved physician of his time. He was the Grand Cyclops of the Ku Klux Klan until 1871 when his health failed, and Captain Robert Anderson McClellan succeeded him until 1872 when Major Robert Donnell became the Grand Cyclops, and served until the close of the Ku Klux Klan.

Dr. Richardson was a born physician; his matchless magnetism engendered in his patients a sublime faith in his skill and ability to save their lives. He was a very handsome man—immaculate in his attire at all times; a most compelling smile radiated his features, and was always a great asset to him in healing the sick, and in comforting the dying.

He would compel cheerfulness from those attending his patients, and did all in his power to cure them, and was marvelously successful.

He was twice married, and to his first marriage were born six children, two of whom are still living in Athens, Alabama: Roswell H. Richardson who still lives in the Colonial mansion of his father, and a daughter, a most beautiful and gracious woman, Mrs. Thomas Maclin Hobbs. The mother of his children was Miss Betty Hine, who was a most lovable character, and in many ways ministered to his sick patients, both high and low, black and white, and was the most universally beloved woman who ever lived in Athens. She died in early womanhood. His second wife was Mrs. Anna (Echols) Sledge, who was a very handsome and brilliant woman, and was his solace in his last years.

The Second Grand Cyclops of the Athens Den, Ku Klux Klan, Robert Anderson McClellan, was born Dec. 24, 1843, in Lincoln County, Tennessee, and was brought to Alabama to live in 1844. He died July 27, 1898, at Athens, Alabama, and is buried there. He was a descendant of a Scotchman who came to this country before the Revolutionary war, and settled in Loudon County, Virginia, William McClellan, who was a captain of cavalry during the Revolutionary war from Virginia. He afterwards went to North Carolina where his son Thomas Joyce was born, and was the father of Robert A. McClellan and his mother was Martha Fleming (Beattie) McClellan.

He enlisted in the Confederate States Army soon after the beginning of the war while he was yet a school boy, and was in company C, Seventh Alabama



cavalry, and served under Col. Jas. C. Malone as a lieutenant.

He had many horses killed under him during the war, and his clothing shot to pieces several times, and by a miracle he escaped without being wounded. He was of a magnificent physique, being six feet and three inches in height, and sufficient weight for his height; after the war he studied law under Judge Wm. H. Walker and begun the practice at Athens and was considered one of the most brilliant lawyers at the Alabama bar. He was in the Constitutional Convention of Alabama in 1875, which reconstructed the State and was a leader in all movements for the betterment of his State. He was mayor of Athens and made many improvements in the town and its government. He was one of the Night Hawks of the Athens Ku Klux Klan and was afterwards made Grand Cyclops.

This information was given me by him, and the picture furnished for this history. He was married in 1872 to a very brilliant woman, Miss Aurora Pryor who survives him, two children, Judge Thomas C. McClellan, Associate Justice of Supreme Court of Alabama, and Memory, who is the wife of Mr. Robert Henry Walker of Athens, Alabama.

Mr. Robert Beaty Mason was born in the ancestral home, Jan. 27, 1846, and died May 19, 1904. He was in the Confederate States Army, Company A, 11th Alabama Cavalry, commanded by General Rhoddy. He was a Night Hawk of the Athens Ku Klux Klan. He is survived by a beautiful and ac-



complished daughter, Miss Mary Mason, and two sons, who are proud that their father was a member of the Ku Klux Klan of that time. They reside in the ancestral mansion, the picture of which is given in this book.

The following statement from Colonel Lee Crandall is given, as he is one of the few men still living who substantiates the fact that the Ku Klux Klan did not *disband* in 1869, as is the popular belief. His business took him all over the South, and he saw them everywhere *when needed*, from 1865-1877:

"Lee Crandall, residing in Alexandria, Rapides Parish, Louisiana, was chosen captain of the 'Rapides Invincibles' which was Company I, 8th Louisiana Infantry. It was ordered to Manassas, Virginia, and was in service at the first battle of Bull Run; said Regiment wintered in Centerville, Virginia, under General Richard Taylor.

"In 1862 when 'Stonewall' Jackson prepared for his great Valley Campaign he detailed me to report to him for special service. After defeating three armies, General Jackson's command went to Richmond, Virginia, to aid General Lee defeat General McClellan.

"On the recommendation of General T. J. Jackson, I was promoted to Major of Cavalry and was ordered to report to General Sterling Price.

"After a few months' service in northern Arkansas and southern Missouri I was chosen colonel of the 47th Arkansas Cavalry. I was captured in Kansas and was imprisoned on Johnson's Island, Ohio, and

remained there from 1864 until the close of the war.

"In 1868 I migrated from New Orleans, La., to Alabama. I married Miss Hattie M. Giers, daughter of Prof. Jean J. Giers, of Valhomsa Springs, Morgan County, Alabama, and we have four sons. I have one daughter by a former marriage, having lost my first wife soon after the daughter's birth. My second wife and five children are still with me.

"I was field manager for the New York *Graphic*, the first daily illustrated newspaper in the world. During the reconstruction period in the South, I introduced this paper into the 'Sunny South.' My success was so great that the *Graphic* selected me to go to Philadelphia and open a branch office in 1875 to report and illustrate the Centennial of 1876 and I did this from day to day during the period of the Centennial.

"In 1874, I was in Alabama, and while there I went to Athens, Limestone County, and persuaded George S. Houston of that place to consent to the appeals of the people to make the race for governor and he said to me he was too near the Tennessee line and felt it would be a disadvantage not being centrally located in the state. I told him that he would be nominated anyway and he gave me his consent to place him in nomination.

"I then went to Huntsville, Madison County, Alabama, and secured the support of Colonel Wm. M. Lowe, a gallant confederate soldier and able statesman who begun to make sure of his county for Houston. I worked for him in Morgan, my adopted

county, and he was elected and served two terms and redeemed Alabama from "Carpet Bag" and negro rule.

"I visited Colonel Wm. M. Lowe, in the home of Colonel Nicholas Davis, with whom he made his home, Colonel Nicholas Davis being his brother-in-law, and met Colonel Davis not long before his death in 1874. It has been stated erroneously that Colonel Nicholas Davis was a scalawag. There was never a greater falsehood stated in any history. He was a very distinguished lawyer and fine man. He was a member of the Secession Convention and wrote the resolution to the ordinance of secession to submit it to the people.

"During the Ku Klux Klan hearings held in Huntsville in 1871, Colonel Nicholas Davis was a witness before the Committee of Congress on the Ku Klux Acts, and his position in politics was falsely reported in these hearings. I know that the Ku Klux Klan elected George S. Houston governor when he redeemed Alabama from debt and disaster. Before I left Louisiana I was affiliated with the White League. After moving to Alabama I lived in the mountains far removed from a railroad, and so isolated that I could not leave my wife alone and could not ride with the Ku Klux Klan at night, but attended to the political affairs for them in the day time, and state here that the Ku Klux Klan redeemed the South from oppression, and restored the seceding States to the Union.

"In 1879 I founded the *National View*, Washington, D. C., a greenback, silver labor paper and edited

it until 1894. I then suspended it and migrated to Arizona. I suggested George W. B. Hunt for the first governor of that state after its admission into the Union. He served three full terms and after an interval of many years was elected for the fourth term and is now governor of Arizona. Governor Hunt is a native of Huntsville, Missouri."

I greatly appreciate the preceding statements made by Col. Lee Crandall, "America's Grand Old Man." He is 91 years old and still in active service in the U. S. Government. He is 2nd Lieutenant Commander of United Confederate Veterans Camp, No. 171, Washington, D. C., and is greatly beloved and honored by a host of friends.

On the occasion of President Harding's funeral he marched alone from 19th Street to the Capitol to pay his respects as a Confederate soldier to his dead president, and was called the "Lone Figure in Gray." Mrs. Lee Crandall is a beautiful and brilliant woman and she and her devoted husband are the most youthful couple I have ever known of their ages, and they typify the old South and the new South.

## IV

### THE FIRST CONVENTION, KU KLUX KLAN, AT NASHVILLE, TENN., MAY, 1867

Previous to the assembling of the Convention the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan had given permission to men in Fayetteville, Lincoln County, Tenn., and Huntsville, Madison County, Alabama, to form Ku Klux Klans. It was around these four adjoining counties, that the Ku Klux Klan pivoted throughout its entire existence.

The Pulaski Ku Klux Klan at this time had decided fully that, at this proposed Convention, a leader for all Ku Klux Klan activities which might develop throughout the South should be chosen, and toward that end, they sent emissaries to place before General Robert E. Lee, the fact that the Ku Klux Klan which had started merely in sport, was rapidly reaching tremendous proportions as a force for meeting distressing conditions in the South, and to ascertain if its continuance would meet his approval.

The men who were chosen to see General Lee were Major Felix G. Buchanan, of Lincoln County; Captain John B. Kennedy of the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan, Captain William Richardson of the Athens Ku Klux Klan, Bishop Richard H. Wilmer, and Captain John B. Floyd, of the Alabama Ku Klux Klan.



General Lee was told in the most impressive manner possible of the good already done by the Ku Klux Klan, in the hope that he would express a wish to join them, but he did not make application.

He said to them, "I would like to assist you in any plan that offers relief. I cannot be with you in person but I will follow you but must be invisible; and my advice is to keep it as you have it, a protective organization."

When this message was delivered to the Convention it led to the christening of the United Ku Klux Klan, the "Invisible Empire," for they felt that General Lee was their "guiding spirit."

Captain William Richardson suggested General Nathan B. Forrest for the leader of the Ku Klux Klan, if it met with General Lee's approval, and he said: "General Nathan B. Forrest is the only man I know who could lead so large a body of men successfully. You may present to him my compliments and ask him if he will accept the leadership."

The emissaries returned and immediately afterwards a general meeting of the four counties, Giles, Lincoln, Limestone and Madison, was held at "The Cove," the meeting place near Athens, Alabama. Captain DeWitt Clinton Davis, a member of the Madison County Ku Klux Klan, was appointed to visit General Forrest at Memphis and invite him to become the leader of the Ku Klux Klan.

Captain Davis had been an officer in "Forrest's Cavalry," and Captain William Richardson accompanied him to Memphis to express his gratitude to

General Forrest for having rescued him at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, during the "War between the States," from being shot as a spy, which he was not.

The Federal guards set fire to the jail when they found that General Forrest had come to liberate the "Rebels." For this act, the Federal commander had these guards court-martialed and shot when General Forrest had them identified by Captain Richardson and another Confederate prisoner sentenced with him.

General Forrest returned to Athens with Captain Davis. He expressed great pleasure at being able to visit again the scene where in September, 1864, he had come to the rescue of this town when it was being burned by the Federal troops under the leadership of Col. Wallace Campbell, U. S. A.

The people of Athens were determined to show all honor to General Forrest on this visit, for it was still fresh in their memories, that he came before daylight on Sept. 24, 1864, when a strong garrison of the United States Army was in possession of the town of Athens, and they were prepared to defend it by formidable forts and block-houses.

These block-houses were supposed to be impregnable, but they proved an easy mark for Forrest's artillery when General Forrest ordered Captain John W. Morton to bring two guns into action. The guns were placed in the street leading to the Fort and the shots tore straight through the embankment.

General Forrest heard a train coming in from Decatur on which he was advised were Federal Troops to

reinforce the garrison. The soldiers left the train and barricaded themselves behind cross-ties which were corded up near the track. They began a terrific fire on the Confederates. Col. D. C. Kelly, C. S. A., ordered his men to dismount and charge the foe behind the cord wood.

General Lyon was skirmishing behind the enemy's rear. The retreat of the Federal army was so rapid that it ran into General Lyon's line and captured it. The line captured was commanded by a gallant young soldier, Capt. Henry C. Klyce. Having taken Klyce their prisoner he told the Federal commander, that General Forrest had completely surrounded the town and further fighting would only subject the men on both sides, to their own fire.

The capture of Athens, Alabama, has been pronounced by military men as one of the most adroit performances of the great cavalry leader for the C. S. A., Nathan B. Forrest, and was at that time the fulfillment of a great need, as a large supply of provisions, horses and ammunition, was captured.

When General Forrest heard of the occupation of Athens, Ala., by the Federals, he was at Florence, Ala., and encamped near Muscle Shoals, forty miles away. He made a pontoon bridge across the river and within a few hours had reached Athens in a heavy rain storm, at night. At daybreak he ordered his soldiers to line up and hold their position, until further orders.

He then decided that it would be almost impossible to capture the block-houses on the western side of the

town from where his line of battle was drawn; so he informed the U. S. A. commander that his full army was at the gates and it was useless to sacrifice life, for he soon could overcome him with great numbers.

General Forrest then issued the following order.

“Headquarters Forrest Cavalry

In the Field, Sept. 24, 1864.

Officer Commanding U. S. Forces, Athens, Ala.

I demand an immediate and unconditional surrender of the entire force and all government stores and property of this post. I have a sufficient force to storm and take your works, and if I am forced to do so the responsibility of the consequences must rest with you. Should you, however, accept the terms, all white soldiers shall be treated as prisoners of war, and the negroes returned to their masters. A reply is requested immediately.

N. B. FORREST,

Major-General, C. S. Army.”

Col. Wallace Campbell, 110th United States Colored Cavalry, Commanding, sent a message, “I have the honor to decline your demand of this date.”

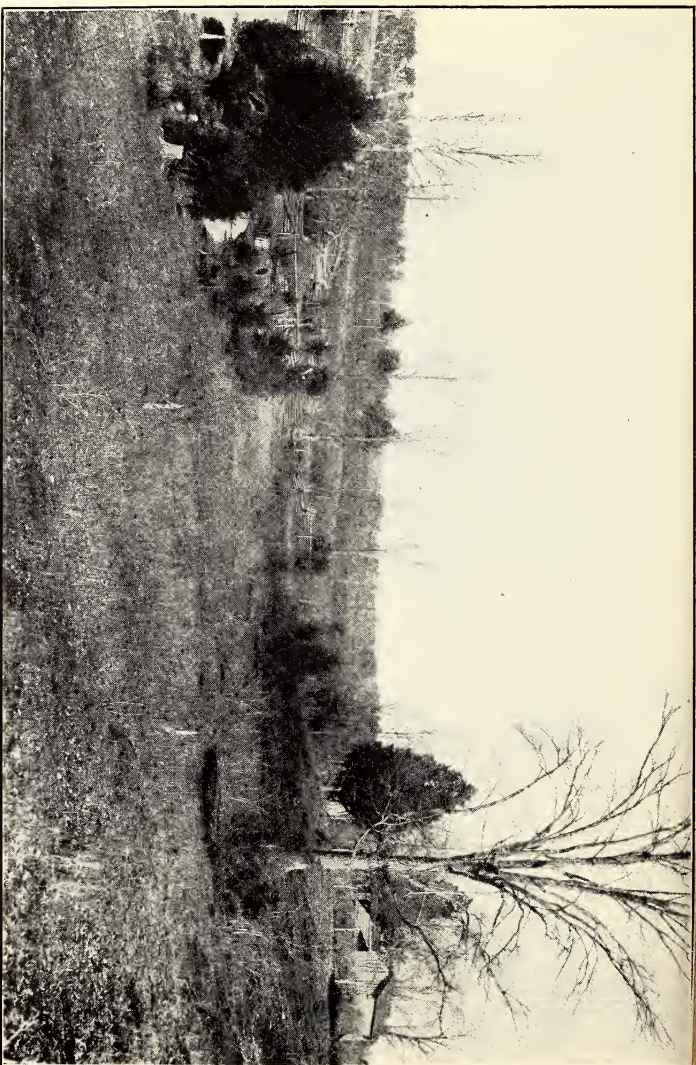
General Forrest then asked for a personal interview, and sent the following:

“Colonel, I desire an interview with you outside the fort at any place you may designate, provided it meets your views. My only object is to stop the effusion of blood that must follow the storming of the place.

(signed) N. B. FORREST.”







### THE COVE SPRING

Three miles from Athens, Alabama, where the first Ku Klux Klan was  
organized in Alabama.

(Photographed by W. A. Rosser, Birmingham View Co.)

General Forrest sent this note under flag of truce by Major Strane and Col. Campbell met him on the Coleman Hill near the old home of Judge Daniel Coleman, and after their conversation Col. Campbell said in his report to the government that he returned to the fort believing in the legerdemain by which General Forrest made four thousand five hundred men appear as ten thousand, and told his officers that he would be compelled to surrender the fort.

The Federals lost three men and four were wounded before they escaped into the forts when they encountered Colonel Jesse Forrest's picket line. He was General Forrest's brother. One of these soldiers killed at Athens, Ala., Captain Tarpley, said to Col. D. C. Kelly of Forrest's command, when he was dying, that he hoped he would have him buried at Athens, Ala., until his mother could come for him. He still sleeps there beside many Confederate dead, and each Decoration Day his grave is laden with flowers by the Daughters of the Confederacy, as his mother was never found.

The terms of surrender between General Forrest and Colonel Wallace were concluded in the Court House yard at Athens, Ala., where a monument now stands commemorating it.

After General Forrest left Athens, Ala., he marched on to Sulphur Trestle near Pulaski, Tenn., where he destroyed forts and block-houses on the Louisville and Nashville Railroad and held in check within the breastworks of Pulaski, Tenn., large Federal forces, thereby saving this town from destruction.

Huntsville, Ala., had a strong Federal garrison, and General Forrest sent part of his division to threaten it, and was the means of saving that beautiful city.

Is it any wonder that the citizens of these three towns where the Ku Klux Klan originated, turned to him again in their dire distress which was much worse than the Civil War, and asked him to lead them?

Previous to the Convention the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan had hundreds of applications throughout the South for permission to organize Ku Klux Klans. Their requests were granted with directions to send delegates to the Convention at Nashville, Tennessee, in May. Upon the date set delegates of these Klans assembled, proving that the Klan had spread like a conflagration, answering the one call: "White Supremacy."

This was in May, 1867, and at the time Nashville was under martial law, and many Federal officers were established in the "Maxwell House," which is shown in the picture. The Ku Klux Klan Convention convened in this hotel in Room No. 10, without the knowledge of the Federal authorities, as they went as silently as they came. General Forrest was administered the oath as Grand Wizard of the "Invisible Empire," by Colonel J. W. Morton who had commanded the artillery in "Forrest's Cavalry," and who was Grand Cyclops of the Nashville Den, Ku Klux Klan. He was requested to accept this honor by Captain John C. Lester, of the founders' Ku



Klux Klan of Pulaski, as until this time he had administered the oath to all members.

The plan of the Ku Klux Klan for reorganization previously prepared was submitted to this convention and adopted. The Ku Klux Klan was for the first time designated as the "Invisible Empire," based on the report of the committee sent to General Robert E. Lee, stating that he would be with them but would be "invisible." When this report was given many of "Forrest's Cavalry" present arose and shouted, "Wizard of the Saddle!" And Major James R. Crowe said, "I nominate him 'Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire!'"

The powers of the Grand Wizard were almost autocratic. His ten assistants were called Genii. The "Invisible Empire" was subdivided into Realms; the Realms were divided into Dominions, which were the Congressional districts; and the Dominions were divided into Provinces which were the limits of the county and the Provinces into Dens.

The chief officer of the Realm was called the "Grand Dragon" and his eight assistants "Hydras." The head of the Dominion was called "Grand Titan," and his six assistants "Furies." The chief of the "Den" was still called "Grand Cyclops" and his assistants "Night Hawks." The other officers of the "Invisible Empire" were "Grand Monk," a "Grand Sentinel" and a "Grand Scribe." The Genii, Hydras, and Night Hawks were staff officers. The only titles in *plain* English were Surgeon-in-Chief, Chaplain-in-Chief, and Judiciary-in-Chief. I asked an old

Ku Klux Klansman why this was and he said: "When a Ku Klux needed them he would wish to call them in plain words."

The Ku Klux Klan was one of the best organized orders that ever existed in the world, based as it was, on secrecy, mystery and the word of honor between men, for then "knighthood was in flower."

This convention adopted the following principles:

"We recognize our relation to the United States Government, the supremacy of the Constitutional laws thereof, and the union of States thereunder."

"To protect the weak, the innocent, the defenseless, from the indignities, wrongs and outrages of the lawless, the violent and the brutal; to relieve the injured and oppressed, succor the suffering; especially the widows and orphans of Confederate soldiers; to protect and defend the Constitution of the United States, and all laws in conformity thereto; and to protect the states and the people thereof from all invasion from any source whatsoever. To aid and assist in the execution of all constitutional laws; to protect the people from unlawful seizure, and from trial except by their peers, in conformity to the laws of the land."

This last resolution was adopted because of the infamous legislation which had been passed against the Confederate soldiers on June 3, 1865, by the 34th General Assembly of Tennessee, which revived the sedition law and deprived the Confederate soldiers and all southern sympathizers of the right of suffrage.

The hope of this Convention was that the strength-



ening of the organization would enable it to enact its rôle as Regulators with greater success.

The parades which had attracted much attention were recommended by General Nathan B. Forrest to be continued, and he issued an order to the Grand Dragons of the Realms for a parade to be held in each province on the night of July 4, 1867.

The Order was named in the first week of its existence the "Ku Klux Klan" and it is believed that this weird alliteration, by its appeal to the imagination of men, was one of the greatest sources of its power, as it led through curiosity, to its growth.

No one was ever asked to join the Ku Klux Klan except General Nathan Bedford Forrest, when he was invited to be its leader; and he agreed to do so in fulfillment of his pledge to his army on the day when he first learned that General Robert E. Lee had surrendered; and, when he surrendered, he said to his soldiers: "Be firm and unwavering, discharging every duty devolving upon you. For my part, with undiminished confidence in your courage and fortitude, and knowing you will not disregard the claims of honor, patriotism and manhood, and those of the women and children of the country, so long defended by your strong arms and willing hearts, your commander announces his determination to stand by you, stay with you and *lead you to the end.*"

He kept his pledge by his tactics as Grand Wizard of the Ku Klux Klan. He won freedom for the Southland, and down the ages of time his fame will

shine none the less brightly as one of the world's greatest cavalry leaders because he was a Ku Klux Klansman from 1865-1877.

This brief biography of General Nathan B. Forrest is given in order that the most sceptical reader will believe that in that dark hour the South had a leader.

Nathan Bedford Forrest was born at Chapel Hill, Tennessee, July 13, 1821. Enlisted as a private in the Confederate States Army in 1861. Captain, Tennessee Cavalry, 1861. Colonel of Forrest's Regiment of Cavalry, May 1861. Brigadier-General July 21, 1862. Major General Dec. 4, 1863. Lieutenant General February 28, 1865.

He won the name "The Wizard of the Saddle" because he rose quickly from the ranks of the Company in which he enlisted, to a Commander, and "was a genius of war." He is today considered one of the world's greatest soldiers.

General Forrest dismissed an officer from his command for immorality. He never drank intoxicating liquors. He always held divine services in his tent on Sunday during the war. Col. D. C. Kelley, who was Chaplain in "Forrest's Cavalry," told me "he never failed to have him pray just before a fight." He was called the "Fighting Parson" by General Forrest.

General Forrest had a profound respect for womanhood—and was a devoted husband. He married Mary Montgomery, a brilliant woman, who was his inspiration. Governor James D. Porter, of Nashville, Tennessee, told me of the grief of Mr. Jefferson

Davis, as they attended General Forrest's funeral together. He said Mr. Davis accorded General Forrest first place as a Cavalry leader of the Civil War.

General Forrest died October 29, 1877, and beside the "Father of Waters" in the city of Memphis, he awaits the final bugle call, beloved for his great bravery in times of war, and for his leadership of the mysterious movements of the Ku Klux Klan which led to his being called the "Saviour of the South" and "Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire."

General Forrest made the most romantic record of all history during the Civil War. He captured millions of dollars worth of supplies, cannon, ammunition and horses, and captured 31,000 prisoners; had 29 horses killed under him, rode thousands of miles by day and night; was wounded seriously four times, and won the soubriquets "King of Mounted Raiders," "Stonewall Jackson of the West," "Wizard of the Saddle," and "The American Murat."

The following statement is from the pen of one of "Forrest's Cavalry," a native of Mississippi and a distinguished Southern gentleman of the old school, Captain Fred Beall, Commander of Camp 171, United Confederate Veterans of the City of Washington, District of Columbia:

"I served under General Nathan Bedford Forrest from the date of the killing of General Earl VanDorn by Dr. ———, in the spring of 1863 at Spring Hill, Tennessee, for breaking up the peace of his home, until he sent me to Mississippi on a very special

service. When it was known that the general had been killed a number of my comrades in arms followed the distinguished citizen who killed him to try to capture him, but he had planned his escape so well by leaving down fences and opening gates throughout the plantations that he was not overtaken.

"I did not go in pursuit of him for I thought General VanDorn ought to have been killed, believing as I did then, and as I do *now* that men should *always* protect the honor of womanhood when attacked either by *high* or *low*.

"After the close of the war between the Southern States and the Federal Government, General Forrest undertook to build a railroad from Selma, Ala., to Memphis. The proposed line of said railroad ran through Lowndes County, Mississippi, in which I then resided and practiced law, at West Point, about 16 miles from the beautiful city of Columbus, the capital of said county.

"General Forrest was making a canvass through the section of the county through which his railroad was to be built, and came to my town with quite a large number of lawyers and other prominent citizens from Columbus to address our people in the interests of his railroad.

"I did not have any desire to oppose General Forrest, but felt it to be my duty as a citizen to oppose his scheme to tax the people at that time for the purpose of building a railroad and accordingly was one of the speakers to oppose the levy of taxes for that purpose.







On this hill near where the Massey Military College now stands was the storm-wrecked home of Benjamin Carter, loaned for the permanent headquarters of the Ku Klux Klan and "Invisible Empire", Ku Klux Klan Avenue, Pulaski, Tennessee.



The Tree at the Cove Spring, three miles from Athens, Alabama, under which General Nathan Bedford Forrest, Confederate States Army, was administered the preliminary oath of the Ku Klux Klan by Captain John C. Lester.

(Photographed by W. A. Rosser, Birmingham View Co.)



"General Forrest in the greatness and sublimity of his noble heart took occasion to say when he began to speak:

"I sincerely regret that my old army friend, Captain Fred Beall, who was one of the most gallant officers in my command has seen it proper to oppose the levying of a tax in this county for the purpose of building a railroad—something greatly needed in this section of the grand old State of Mississippi."

"By the aid of the negro vote he carried the tax but we had it annulled by the United States Court. It was never collected and the railroad was never built. In the meantime General Forrest had resumed his citizenship in Memphis, Tennessee, became a follower of the Meek and Lowly Jesus, and Dr. Stainback, his pastor, told me some time after the death of General Forrest that he was with him when he died and that he never saw a more beautiful death-bed scene in all his life than was that of General Forrest.

"He said that the General was truly a converted man and died in the full and real hope of a man who 'had been born again.'

"May I add that General Forrest neither drank intoxicants or used tobacco in any form during all his life, but strictly abstained from everything of this kind.

"I not only served under General Forrest in the Southern Army and then learned to love and honor him, but have always believed him to be the greatest military genius of the war.

"General Forrest was Grand Wizard of the In-



visible Empire (of the Ku Klux Klan) and while attempting to build this railroad he found conditions so unbearable in Mississippi on account of the reconstruction measures of the general government that he personally organized the Realm of Mississippi, and I served under him as one of the officers of the Realm of Mississippi and am proud of it, he having appointed me.

“General James Z. George was appointed by General Forrest Grand Dragon of the Realm of Mississippi, ‘Invisible Empire.’ ”

Mrs. Chattie A. Beall, wife of Captain Fred Beall, was born January 13, 1842, and was a daughter of Peter and Mariah McEachin of Floral College in the vicinity of Lumberton, North Carolina, and married Captain Fred Beall in West Point, Mississippi, November 24, 1874. Before her marriage, she was correspondent for magazines and large and popular newspapers. She wrote stories and in this respect acquired much popularity. She was of the social staff of the *Picayune and Times-Democrat* of New Orleans, the *Memphis Appeal*, the *Birmingham-Age Herald*, *Mobile Register*, and the local papers of West Point, Mississippi, under the name “Dora Dunbar,” and other *noms de plume*. She wrote poetry and set it to music and is a most accomplished musician. She is a devoted Christian, an active worker in temperance, but was heartily opposed to woman’s suffrage. She made the Ku Klux regalia for her husband, and other Klansmen.

Mrs. Beall’s ancestors were Scotch. She loves



the South and Southern people, but bears no ill will towards the people of the North. She recognizes the great services of the Ku Klux Klan and claims that they saved the civilization of the South. Captain Beall says of his beloved wife: "In my opinion she is the greatest woman who ever lived."

## V.

### FOURTH OF JULY PARADES.

On the day appointed by General Forrest at the Convention, for the first general parade throughout the South of the Ku Klux Klan, the streets were strewn with slips of paper and notices posted along the highways, "Ku Klux Klan will parade tonight." Throngs of people came to points of vantage to see the parade. A sky-rocket sent up was the signal for the Ku Klux Klans to move. The necessary orders were given by signals from the whistles which the Ku Klux Klan had adopted. With funereal slowness the white clad masked men marched and countermarched.

Curiosity which had brought out the great crowds of people was not gratified. Those who had come with the hope of finding out who were the Ku Klux Klan, were disappointed. For they appeared and disappeared as silently as though they were spirits from the nearby battlefield. The horses as well as their riders were completely disguised in white.

The parades exerted a terrifying and wholesome influence over the lawless element throughout the South.

General Nathan B. Forrest paraded for the first time with the Ku Klux Klan at Pulaski, Tennessee,

and initiated the original Ku Klux Klan into some of his tactics which had won such fame for him during the Civil War; elusive tactics, marching and counter-marching in such a manner as to bewilder the eye-witnesses and lead them into believing that there were many thousands of men, while in reality there were only a few hundred. He then rode to Athens, Alabama, accompanied by members of that Ku Klux Klan, which was twenty-five miles from Pulaski, and reached there about midnight, where he began re-enacting the tactics which he originally employed at the "Battle of Athens."

One of the incidents of the Athens parade was recently told me by the wife of one of the Athens Ku Klux Klan, that there lived in Athens a Northern man and woman who had been residents of the town for many years before the Civil War, and on account of their age and good conduct had never been molested during the entire period of the War, and had not been afraid of the Confederate soldiers.

But on seeing the Ku Klux Klan as they rode around the Court House square on which stood the burned walls of the Court House, which had been destroyed during the Civil War by Federal soldiers, and which weird background reflected by the torch-lights carried by the Ku Klux Klan, was a scene calculated to appall the stoutest heart, the Northern woman who was a Catholic, ran to and fro, praying to the "Virgin Mary" and counting her beads. Her husband came to her and said: "For God's sake stop counting your beads and go straight to Jesus Christ,

for no Yankees are safe here with these spirits of the dead Confederates."

The woman who told me said she went to the couple and assured them that no harm should come to them, but the old gentleman said: "I have never been afraid of the living Confederates, but I am of these dead ones." The woman herself, who was trying to comfort and allay the fright of the old people, admitted that she felt the power and mystery of the Ku Klux Klan, although she knew that her own husband was one of them, parading, as she had made his uniform.

The first simultaneous parades of the Ku Klux Klan, came and went, "like wraiths in the night," and left a profound impression on the people throughout the country. Many things had happened previous to these parades which had aroused the entire south and caused bitterness and resentment such as had never been engendered by the War, and the people felt that the Ku Klux Klan was a serious organization and that their power would be invaluable to them in correcting these conditions.

The most important of these unjust acts was the interference of the general government with public worship in the State of Alabama. This had been a subject of great excitement and controversy since June 1865, when the Right Rev. Richard Hooker Wilmer, Bishop of Alabama, in a letter to the clergy and laity issued his famous pastoral circular which is quoted in General Order No. 38, the Order which struck at the foundation of religious liberty by the United States Government.

HEADQUARTERS.  
DEPARTMENT OF ALABAMA.

Mobile, Ala., Sept. 20, 1865.

GENERAL ORDERS. No. 38:

"The Protestant Episcopal Church of the United States has established a form of Prayer to be used for the President of the United States and all in Civil Authority. During the continuance of the late wicked and groundless rebellion, the prayer was changed to one for the President of the Confederate States, and, so altered, was used in the Protestant Episcopal churches of the Diocese of Alabama.

"Since the 'lapse' of the Confederate Government and the restoration of the authority of the United States over the late rebellious States the prayer for the President has been altogether omitted in the Episcopal churches of Alabama.

"This omission was recommended by the Right Rev. Richard Hooker Wilmer, Bishop of Alabama, in a letter to the clergy and laity, dated June 20, 1865. The only reason given by Bishop Wilmer for the omission of the prayer, which, to use his own language, was established by the highest ecclesiastical authorities, and has for many years constituted a part of the Liturgy of the Church, is stated by him in the following words:

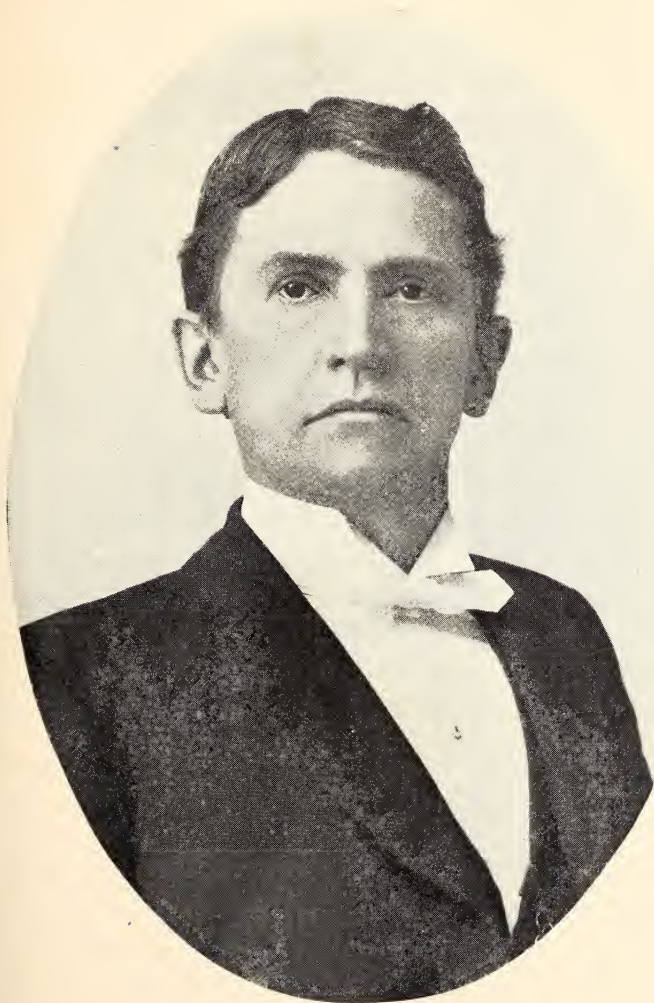
" 'Now, the Church in this country has established a form of prayer for the President and all in civil authority. The language of the prayer was selected by careful reference to the subject of the prayer—



"All in Civil Authority"; and she desires for that authority prosperity and long continuance. No one can reasonably be expected to desire a long continuance of military rule. Therefore the prayer is altogether inappropriate and inapplicable to the present conditions of things, when no civil authority exists in the exercise of its functions. Hence, as I remarked in the Circular, "we may yield a true allegiance to, and sincerely pray for grace, wisdom and understanding in behalf of, a government founded upon force, while at the same time we could not in good conscience ask for its continuance, prosperity," etc., etc.

"It will be observed from this extract—1st, That the Bishop, because he cannot pray for the continuance of 'military rule,' therefore declines to pray for those in authority. 2nd, He declares the prayer inappropriate because no civil authority (exists) in the exercise of its functions.

"On the 20th of June, the date of this letter, there was a President of the United States, a Cabinet, Judges of the Supreme Court, and thousands of other civil officers of the United States, all in the exercise of their functions. It was for them specially that this form of prayer was established, yet the Bishop cannot among all these find any subject worthy of his prayers. Since the publication of this letter a Civil Governor has been appointed for the State of Alabama, and in every county, Judges and Sheriffs have been appointed, and all these are, and for weeks have been, in the exercise of their functions; yet the prayer has not been restored.



CAPT. WILLIAM RICHARDSON

of Alabama, who suggested that General Nathan B. Forrest be invited to become the leader of the Ku Klux Klan.



“The prayer which the Bishop advised to be omitted is not a prayer for the continuance of military rule, or the continuance of any particular form of government, or any particular person in power. It is simply a prayer for the temporal and spiritual weal of the persons in whose behalf it is offered.

“It is a prayer to the High and Mighty Ruler of the Universe that He would with His power behold and bless the President of the United States and all others in authority—that He would replenish them with the grace of His Holy Spirit that they may always incline to His will and walk in His ways; that He would endow them plenteously with heavenly gifts, grant them in health and prosperity, long to live, and finally after this life to attain everlasting joy and felicity. It is a prayer at once applicable and appropriate, and which any heart not filled with hatred, malice, and all uncharitableness, could conscientiously offer.

“The advice of the Bishop to omit the prayer, and its omission by the clergy, is not only a violation of the canons of the Church, but shows a factious and disloyal spirit, and is a marked insult to every loyal citizen within the Department. Such men are unsafe teachers, and not to be trusted in places of power and influence over public opinion.

“It is therefore ordered, pursuant to the instructions of Major General Thomas, commanding military Division of Tennessee, that said Richard Wilmer, Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church of the Diocese of Alabama, and the Protestant Episco-

pal clergy of said diocese, be, and they are hereby forbidden to preach or perform divine service, and that their places of worship be closed until such a time as said Bishop and clergy show a sincere return to their allegiance to the Government of the United States, and give evidence of a loyal and patriotic spirit by offering to resume the use of the prayer for the President of the United States and all in civil authority, and by taking the amnesty oath prescribed by the President.

"This prohibition shall continue in each individual case until special application is made through the military channels of these headquarters for permission to preach and perform divine service, and until such application is approved at these or superior headquarters.

"District commanders are required to see that this order is carried into effect.

"By order of MAJOR GENERAL CHARLES R. WOOD.

"FRED H. WILSON, A.A.G."

Bishop Richard Hooker Wilmer (known as the "Rebel Bishop" as he was the only Bishop consecrated during the Civil War,) said to General Wood:

"No one can be expected to pray for a continuance of military rule."

He then asked to have the order rescinded, but his request was refused.

Bishop Wilmer went to Washington on his own initiative to call on the President in person and report this condition.



He said to the President: "The Constitution prohibits Congress from interfering with religious worship, and I ask you to see to it that Congress not be allowed through either of her arms, civil or military, to do what is prohibited to herself."

He asked that General Order No. 38 be rescinded, which President Johnson ordered the General in Command to do.

This act was indelibly impressed not alone upon the history of the Church of which Bishop Wilmer was so conspicuous a leader, but upon the history of our country as relates to church and state, which was separated by the founders of this country and sets a precedent for all time to come; and, in the words of the Right Rev. William S. Perry, Bishop of Iowa, historian of this Church: "This action of the Bishop established for all time to come in this land at least, the principle that in '*Spiritualities*' the Church's rule is supreme."

Bishop Wilmer's clear-headed courage in dealing with this separation of Church and State challenged the admiration and coöperation of Father Abram Ryan who was a Virginian, as was Bishop Wilmer; and, the brave stand of these two great Southerners was perhaps one of the most potent powers in the growth of the Ku Klux Klan as they felt their very inherent rights were threatened. The Ku Klux Klan guarded his churches while Bishop Wilmer *prayed* in Alabama. I was informed by Bishop Richard H. Wilmer that he was Chaplain of the Ku Klux Klan for the Realm of Alabama, and that Father Abram

Ryan was the Chaplain of the "Invisible Empire." This last fact was also given me by Mrs. Josephine Upshaw, a Catholic, who was a close friend of Father Ryan, and by Mrs. Henry J. Pepin, a Catholic, at whose home the Ku Klux Klan held meetings attended by Father Ryan, at Athens, Alabama, and by Colonel Sumner A. Cunningham. Abram Joseph Ryan was born in Norfolk, Virginia, 1839, and died in Louisville, Ky., 1886. He was a Catholic priest, a chaplain in the Confederate States Army, and Chaplain-in-chief of the "Invisible Empire," and did great work for the Ku Klux Klan. He was an editor and poet. His high literary gifts, which he used to glorify his beloved South, have given him an imperishable fame and place as a poet. Father Ryan wrote his immortal poem, "The Conquered Banner," just after General Robert E. Lee's surrender.

I was also given the fact that Father Ryan was the Chaplain of the "Invisible Empire" by General John B. Gordon and other Ku Klux Klansmen.

The consensus of opinion of all the most influential Ku Klux whom I have interviewed, was, that had not the Churches of the South, in their separation, as was done by the Episcopalians, Presbyterians, Methodists and Baptists, been interfered with in their worship, and bitterly criticized by the Northern branch from which they had severed themselves, there would not have been such strength developed in the Ku Klux Klan, for among their number will be found

the most distinguished leaders of all these Churches who felt the sting of the injustice done them on account of this separation which was caused by the Civil War.

In a letter written in 1866 by Bishop Wilmer to Bishop Hopkins of Vermont, giving reasons why the Episcopal Church South could not rejoin that of the North, he said:

“Nor can we, by our silent presence, be faithless to the memory of our dead; nor can we consent to stand by, while others inscribe ‘Traitor’ on their tombstones.”

At the time of the Convention there were only a few Ku Klux Klans comprising several hundreds outside of Tennessee and Alabama. On the night of the Fourth of July Parades, 1867, as stated by General Forrest later, as a witness before the Congressional Committee, investigating the Ku Klux Klan, the Order had so increased as to attract country-wide attention.

By 1869 conditions had become intolerable in the South. Governor Brownlow of the State of Tennessee had armed the negroes, in addition to the white troops already stationed in the South, and directed them to fire on the Ku Klux Klan wherever seen.

This Order, No. 38, *coupled with the fact that outrages were being committed under the disguise of the Ku Klux Klan in regions far removed from where the Klan existed*, forced the Ku Klux Klan to print and publish General Order No. 1.

**HEADQUARTERS REALM No. 1. (Tennessee.)****Dreadful Era, Black Epoch.****Dreadful Hour.**

WHEREAS, Information of an authentic character has reached these headquarters that the blacks in the counties of Marshall, Maury, Giles and Lawrence (Tenn.), are organized into military companies, with the avowed purpose to make war upon and exterminate the Ku Klux Klan, said blacks are hereby solemnly warned and ordered to desist from further action in such organizations, if they exist.

The G. D. (Grand Dragon) regrets the necessity of such an order. But this Ku Klux Klan shall not be outraged and interfered with by lawless negroes and meaner white men, who do not and never have understood our purposes.

In the first place this Ku Klux Klan is not an institution of violence, lawlessness and cruelty; it is not lawless; it is not aggressive; it is not military; it is not revolutionary.

It is, essentially, originally and inherently a protective organization. It proposes to execute law instead of resisting it; and to protect all good men, whether white or black, from the outrages and atrocities of bad men of both colors, who have been for the past three years a terror to society, and an injury to us all.

The blacks seem to be impressed with the belief that this Ku Klux Klan is especially their enemy. We are not the enemy of the blacks, as long as they behave themselves, make no threats upon us, and do



not attack or interfere with us; but if they make war upon us they must abide the awful retribution that will follow.

This Ku Klux Klan, while in its peaceful movements, and disturbing no one, has been fired into three times. This will not be endured any longer; and if it occurs again, and the parties be discovered, a remorseless vengeance will be wreaked upon them.

We reiterate that we are for peace and law and order. No man, white or black, shall be molested for his political sentiments. This Ku Klux Klan is not a political party; it is not a military party; it is a protective organization, and will never use violence except in resisting violence.

Outrages have been perpetrated by irresponsible parties in the name of the Ku Klux Klan. Should such parties be apprehended, they will be dealt with in a manner to insure us future exemption from such imposition. These impostors have, in some instances, whipped negroes. This is wrong! Wrong! It is denounced by this Klan as it must be by all good and humane men.

The Ku Klux Klan, now as in the past, is prohibited from doing such things. We are striving to protect all good, peaceful, well-disposed and law-abiding men, whether white or black.

The G. D. deems this order due to the public, due to the Ku Klux Klan, and due to those who are misguided and misinformed. We therefore, request that all newspapers who are friendly to law, and peace, and the public welfare, will publish the same.



By order of the G. D., Realm No. 1.

By the Grand Scribe.

The Scribe was Capt. John B. Kennedy, and he gave me this Order for this history.

The Ku Klux Klan regretted the necessity for having to print or publish this General Order No. 1, because the "Interdiction" of the Ku Klux Klan prohibited any written or printed matter other than notices of their parades.

Following is the original Interdiction, given me a few years before his death, by Captain John B. Kennedy, one of the original Ku Klux Klan:

"The origin, mystery and Ritual of the Ku Klux Klan shall never be written, but the same shall be communicated orally and memorized by each member."

## VI.

### TENNESSEE ANTI-KU KLUX LAW.

Many deeds of disorder occurring throughout the South, it became evident to the Ku Klux Klan that there were bogus organizations using their disguises, in order to shield themselves from detection in committing crimes and to throw the blame on the Ku Klux Klan, so they had a new problem to face and they handled it in such a manner as to have proof positive that they were being imposed upon by men sent there from the North to make it appear that the Ku Klux were disturbing the peace.

In many instances when men who could not give the Ku Klux Klan grips and pass-words were stripped of their disguises, it was found that they were negroes or "Brownlow Republicans." The Ku Klux would have them arrested by the very men whom they represented. This condition developed so rapidly and bore so directly upon "Brownlow's Loyal Men" that the anti-Ku Klux Laws were passed by "Parson Brownlow's" party of Tennessee, hoping thereby to prevent all men from disguising.

Growing out of this situation in September 1868, the legislature of Tennessee was called by Governor Brownlow in extra session, and passed a most stringent and bloody Anti-Ku Klux statute. This was

the climax of the most infamous legislation against the ex-Confederates and Southern sympathizers which ever disgraced the statute books of any country.

This unconstitutional legislation began in 1865, in the passage of the Alien and Sedition Act, and culminated in the passage of the Anti-Ku Klux statute in 1868, a statute directed against any secret organization, disguised or otherwise. This statute was unconstitutional, anarchistic and was one of the chief reasons for the spread of the Ku Klux Klan, as it aimed at the very life and liberty of the people of the South.

The Anti-Ku Klux Law is quoted in full, as follows:

**Sec. 1. BE IT ENACTED, BY THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF TENNESSEE,** That if any person or persons shall unite with, associate with, promote or encourage any secret organization of persons who shall prowl through the country or towns of this State, by day or by night, disguised or otherwise, for the purpose of disturbing the peace, or alarming the peaceable citizens of any portion of this State, on conviction by any tribunal of this State, shall be fined not less than five hundred dollars, imprisoned in the penitentiary not less than five years, and shall be rendered infamous.

**Sec. 2. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED,** That it shall be the duty of all the courts in this State, before the impaneling of any grand jury or petit jury in any cause whatever, to inquire of the juror on oath, whether he shall be associated in any way obnoxious

to the first section of this act; and if such juror shall decline to give a voluntary answer, or shall answer affirmatively, such persons shall be disqualified as a juror in any case in any court in this State.

Sec. 3. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That, for the purpose of facilitating the execution of the provisions of this act, it shall be the duty of the Prosecuting Attorneys of this State or grand jurors, or either of them, to summon or cause to be summoned, any persons he shall have a well-grounded belief has any knowledge of such organization as described by the first section of this act, and if any person shall fail or refuse to obey such summons, or shall appear and refuse to testify, such persons so summoned shall suffer the penalty imposed by the first section of this act; and if such witness shall avoid the service of said subpœna or summons, the sheriff or other officer, shall return such fact on said process, when the court shall order a copy of said process to be left at the last place of residence of such person sought to be summoned; and if such person shall fail to appear according to the command of said process, said court shall enter a judgment NISI against such person for the sum of five hundred dollars, for which, SCI. FA. shall issue, as in other cases of forfeiture of subpœna.

Sec. 4. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That no prosecutor shall be required on any indictment under the provisions of this act; and all the courts of this State shall give a remedial construction to the same; and that no presentment or indictment shall

be quashed, or declared insufficient for want of form.

Sec. 5. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That it shall be the duty of all the courts of the State, at every term, for two years from and after the passage of this act, to call before it all the officers thereof, who shall be sworn, and have this act read or explained to them; and the court shall ask said officers if they shall have any knowledge of any person of the State, or out of it, that shall be guilty of any of the offenses contained in this act, and that, if at any time they shall come to such knowledge, or shall have a well-grounded belief that any person or persons shall be guilty of a violation of this act or any of its provisions, that they will immediately inform the Prosecuting Attorney for the State thereof; and if such Prosecuting Attorney, upon being so informed, shall fail, refuse or neglect to prosecute such person or persons so informed on, he shall be subject to the same penalties imposed by the first section of this act, and shall be stricken from the roll of attorneys in said court.

Sec 6. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That if any officer, or other person, shall inform any other person that he or she is to be summoned as a witness under any of the provisions of this act, or any other statute or law of this State, with the intent and for the purpose of defeating any of the provisions of this act, or any criminal law of this State; or if any officer, clerk, sheriff or constable shall refuse or fail to perform any of the duties imposed by this Act, upon conviction, shall suffer the penalties by the first



section of this act, and shall be disqualified from holding office in this State for two years.

Sec. 7. **BE IT FURTHER ENACTED**, That if any person shall voluntarily inform on any person guilty of any of the provisions of this act, upon conviction, such informant shall be entitled and receive one-half of the fine imposed; and if any officer, three-fourths.

Sec. 8. **BE IT FURTHER ENACTED**, That if any person, guilty of any of the provisions or offenses enumerated in this act, that shall appear before any jury or prosecuting officer of the State, and shall inform him or them of any offense committed by any person or persons against the criminal laws of this State, such person or witness shall not be bound to answer to any charge for the violations of any provisions of any law about which such person or witness shall be examined; and the court shall protect such witness from any prosecution whatever.

Sec. 9. **BE IT FURTHER ENACTED**, That where any process shall be issued against the person or any citizen in any county of this State for any violations of the provisions of this act, and such shall be returned not executed, for any cause whatever, by the sheriff or other officer, to the court from which it was issued, with an affidavit appended thereto, plainly setting forth the reason for the non-execution of such process, then it shall be the duty of the clerk, without delay to issue an **ALIAS CAPIAS** to the same county, if the home of the defendant shall be in said county, either in part or in whole, when said sheriff

or other officer shall give notice to the inhabitants of said county by posting such notice at the court house of said county, of the existence of said *capias*; and if the inhabitants of such county shall permit such defendant to be or to live in said county, in part or in whole, the inhabitants shall be subject to an assessment of not less than five hundred dollars, nor more than five thousand dollars, at the discretion of the court, which said assessment shall be made in the following manner, to-wit: When the sheriff or other officer shall return his *ALIAS CAPIAS*, showing that said defendant is an inhabitant of said county, in part, or in whole, and that the citizens thereof have failed or refused to arrest said defendant, which every citizen is authorized hereby to do or perform, said court shall order *SCI. FA.* to issue to the proper officer to make known to the chairman, judge or other presiding officer of the County Court, to appear and show cause why final judgment should not have been entered up accordingly; which if any County Court fails or refuses to do and perform, any judge in vacation, shall grant a *MANDAMUS* to compel said County Court to assess and collect said assessment, to be paid into the State treasury for the benefit of the school fund; provided, said assessment shall not be made of the sheriff or other officer, upon the return of the original, or *ALIAS* writs, show cause why the same cannot be executed, which may be done by his affidavit and two respectable witnesses known to the court as such.

Sec. 10. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That

all the inhabitants in this State shall be authorized to arrest any person defendant, under the provisions of this act, in any county in this State without process.

Sec. 11. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That if any person or persons shall write, publish, advise, entreat or persuade, privately or publicly, any class of persons, or any individual, to resist any of the laws of this State calculated to molest or disturb the good people and peaceable citizens of the State, such persons shall be subject to the penalties of the first section of this act; and if an attorney at law, he shall be stricken from the roll of attorneys, and be prevented from practicing in any court in this State.

Sec. 12. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That if any person shall make threats against any elector or person authorized to exercise the elective franchise, with the intention of intimidating or preventing such person or persons from attending any election in this State, they shall be subject to the penalties inflicted by the first section of this act.

Sec. 13. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That if any person or persons shall attempt to break up any election in this State, or advise the same to be done, with a view of preventing the lawful or qualified citizens of this State from voting, they shall be subject to the penalties prescribed by the first section of this act; and the attorney of the State in all convictions under the provisions of this act, shall be entitled to a tax fee of one hundred dollars, to be taxed in the bill of costs, and to be paid by the defendant.

And the attorney prosecuting for the State shall keep all information given him a secret, unless it shall be necessary in the opinion of the court, that the same should be made public.

Sec. 14. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That it shall be the duty of all the judges in this State to read this act to the grand juries, and give it especially in charge to said juries.

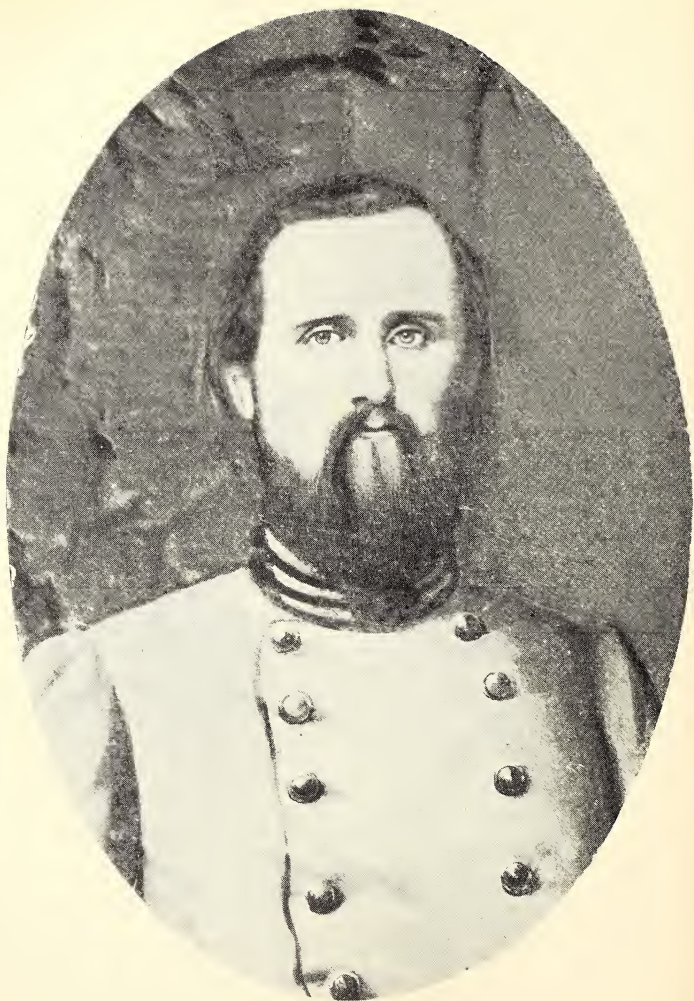
Sec. 15. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That the treasurer of this State shall not be authorized to pay any judge in this State any salary, or to any clerk, sheriff, or attorney, any fee or bill of costs that may accrue to such parties under the provisions of this act until such judge or other officer shall have filed with the comptroller or treasurer an affidavit plainly setting forth that he has fully complied with the provisions of this act.

Sec. 16. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That if any person or citizen of this State shall voluntarily feed, or lodge, or entertain, or conceal in the woods or elsewhere any offender known to such person to be charged with any criminal offense under this act, such person shall suffer the penalty prescribed by the first section of this act; provided, that this section shall not apply to persons who, under the ancient law, might feed or conceal the party charged.

Sec. 17. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That if any person, guilty of any of the offenses enumerated in this act, shall have, own or possess any real estate, held by deed or grant, or entry, or by fee, or entail in law, or equity, the same shall be bound for







CAPTAIN DE WITT CLINTON DAVIS

of Alabama, of Forrest's Cavalry who was commissioned by the Ku Klux Klan to accompany Captain John C. Lester to extend the invitation to General Nathan B. Forrest to become the leader.

costs, fines or penalties imposed by any of the provisions of this act; and a lien is hereby declared to attach to all estates in law or equity, as above, dating from the day or night of the commission of the offense, which fact may be found by the jury trying the cause or any other jury impaneled for that purpose; and if in the opinion of the court the defendant has evaded the law, the jury shall find such fact, and the estate of the defendant shall be made liable for the cost of the State; and there shall be no limitation to the recovery of the same.

**Sec. 18. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED,** That if any person or persons shall be guilty of a violation of any of the provisions of this act, to the prejudice or injury of any individual, the jury trying the defendant shall, or may find such fact with the amount of injury sustained which shall be paid to the injured party or persons entitled to the same, by the laws of descent of this State, with all costs, and who shall have the same lien on the property of the defendant that is possessed or given to the State by this act.

**Sec. 19. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED,** That if any person shall knowingly make or cause to be made, any uniform or regalia, in part or in whole, by day or night, or shall be found in possession of the same, he, she or they shall be fined at the discretion of the court, and shall be rendered infamous.

**Sec. 20. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED,** That in addition to the oath prescribed by the constitution and oath of office every public officer shall swear that he has never been a member of the organization

known as the Ku Klux Klan, or other disguised body of men, contrary to the laws of the State, and that he has neither directly nor indirectly aided, encouraged, supported or in any manner countenanced said organization.

Sec. 21. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That the attorneys or prosecuting officers for the State, shall be entitled to and receive five per cent on all forfeitures or assessments made by this act, on compensations to be paid by the defendant.

Sec. 22. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That the standard of damages for injuries to individuals shall be as follows: For disturbing any of the officers of the State or any other person, by entering the house or houses, or place of residence of any such individual in the night, in a hostile manner, or against his will, the sum of ten thousand dollars; and it shall be lawful for the person so assailed to kill the assailant. For killing any individual in the night twenty thousand dollars; provided such person killed was peaceable at that time. That all other injuries shall be assessed by the court and jury in proportion; and the court trying said causes may grant as many new trials as may, in his opinion, be necessary to attain the end of justice.

Sec. 23. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That all persons present, and not giving immediate information on the offenders, shall be regarded as guilty of a misdemeanor against the law, and shall be punished accordingly.

Sec. 24. BE IT FURTHER ENACTED, That

it shall not be lawful for any persons to publish any proffered or pretended order of said secret, unlawful clans; and any person convicted under any of the provisions of this act, shall not claim, hold or possess any property, real or personal, exempt from execution, fine penalty or costs, under this act; provided, that nothing herein contained shall be so construed as to prevent or exempt any person heretofore guilty of any of the offenses herein contained from the prosecution under the law as it now stands. This act to take effect from        after its passage.

The same legislature that passed this law also authorized the Governor to organize a volunteer force to be known as the "Tennessee State Guards," and that it should be composed of "loyal men," and to be "loyal" in Tennessee was to be a "Brownlow Republican" and endorse such laws as the Anti-Ku Klux and Militia Laws.

Under the Militia Law on the recommendation of ten Union men that troops were needed, the Governor could declare martial law in such counties as he chose, and this law provided that the expense of these troops should be collected from the people of the counties in which they were quartered. The "Tennessee State Guards" did go to several counties and commenced shooting on the Ku Klux Klan which was directly responsible for the issuing of the Klan's General Order No. 1, as previously stated.

After the passage of the Anti-Ku Klux Law many men were arrested throughout the South but "no single instance occurred of the arrest of a disguised man



who, when stripped of his mask, was found to be an original Ku Klux." The most famous of the trials of these men were held in Alabama and South Carolina at a cost of many millions of dollars to the Federal Government, without a single conviction of a Ku Klux of the real Order.

The sending of troops to Union City, Tennessee, led to the Ku Klux Klan guarding the town, and patrolling the county day and night. During the time this situation obtained, a negro who was a stranger in the community, criminally assaulted a woman seventy years of age and attempted to murder her. The Ku Klux, fifteen hundred strong, pursued the negro man over the Kentucky line before they captured him. They then returned with him to Obion County where the crime was committed, and within a few hundred yards of where the Federal Troops were quartered, built a scaffold on which to hang him. But the woman's son, who was one of the Ku Klux, demanded that he be allowed to kill him and quietly walking to a nearby house, borrowed an axe and returning took the negro, and placing his head on a stump, severed it from his body. Not wishing to have the Ku Klux held responsible for this act, he had taken off his regalia, and he took the negro's head to the commanding officer of the Militia, held high on a spike. The officer who made no attempt to arrest him told him that he would have done the same thing had his mother been the victim of that crime.

The enactment of the Tennessee Anti-Ku Klux Laws caused General Forrest to resort to his war-



time tactics and he ostensibly suspended activities of the Ku Klux Klan in the way of parades and other public demonstrations, as this law would even operate in the punishment of the women who had made the regalia for them.

These laws served only on the one hand to intensify the license of the unlawful, and on the other to drive the Ku Klux Klan into more secret but determined activities.

William P. ("Parson") Brownlow, the radical Governor of Tennessee, who passed these laws, made the following statement at a Convention in New York City, during reconstruction:

"If I had the power I would arm every wolf, panther, catamount and bear in the mountains of America, every crocodile in the swamps of Florida, every negro in the South, every devil in Hell, clothe them in the uniform of the Federal army, and turn them loose on the rebels of the South and exterminate every man, woman and child, south of Mason and Dixon's line. I would like to see negro troops under Ben Butler crowd every rebel into the Gulf of Mexico, and drown them as the devil did the hogs in the Sea of Galilee." He said, at a public meeting in Philadelphia, just after the surrender of General Robert E. Lee: "I am one of those who believe the war ended too soon. We have whipped the South but not enough. The loyal masses constitute an overwhelming majority of the people of this country and they intend to march again on the South and intend that the "second war" shall be no child's play. The "second army" will, as

they ought to, make the entire South as God found the earth, without form, and void."

Such "Salesmen of Hate" as Brownlow and Henry Ward Beecher and others, who were disseminating this withering blight through the North against the South had only one thing in mind, that the Government would attempt a negro republic in the Southern States, after killing all the white people, that such people as they would be able to exploit the free negroes and fill their pockets with their earnings.

The Ku Klux Klan—by the help of God—outwitted these fiends in human form, and saved the South and its noble traditions, even the Powers of Darkness, led by them, could not prevail against the men of the "Invisible Empire."

The views of the Minority of the Committee to Investigate Affairs in the Southern States given to the United States Senate, March 10, 1871, signed by Frank P. Blair, and T. F. Bayard, contain this statement with regard to the officials of the United States Government at that time: "From cruel men they are transformed into savage beasts, with no vestige of reason left, but what serves to furnish the invention and refinement of ferocious subtlety for purposes of which beasts are incapable and at which fiends would blush."

Among the firebrands of hate for the South sown throughout this country and Europe at that time was a book, "Uncle Tom's Cabin," written by that mercenary, Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, a shrewd Yankee woman who many years before the Civil War was in

*need of money* and conceived that novel which led to this war. In 1853 Dr. A. Woodward, a Northern man who lived in Knoxville, Tennessee, in a review of this book, said: "Should Mrs. Stowe's vile aspersion of Southern character and her loose, reckless and wicked misrepresentations of the institution of slavery ever become accredited in the Northern section of our country, I fear the consequences. I will not say that Mrs. Stowe had designs on the liberty of her country but, in writing 'Uncle Tom's Cabin,' she gave much comfort to England, who is thankful to her as she is being now royally entertained there."

Henry Ward Beecher, Mrs. Stowe's brother, said, during re-construction: "The negro is superior to the white race. If the latter do not forget their pride of race and color, and amalgamate with the purer and richer blood of the blacks, they will die out and wither away in unprolific skinniness."

Wendell Phillips said, from Henry Ward Beecher's church, about the Civil War, just after the surrender: "I know it means something like barbarian conquest, I will allow, but I do not believe there will be any peace until 347,000 men of the South are either hanged or exiled." Such hate as this passing over the North towards the South led the Ku Klux Klan to strengthen its numbers continually, that it would have an "invisible and invincible second army," should the United States Government attempt to fulfill the intentions of such men as these, and start a war of extermination for their benefit.

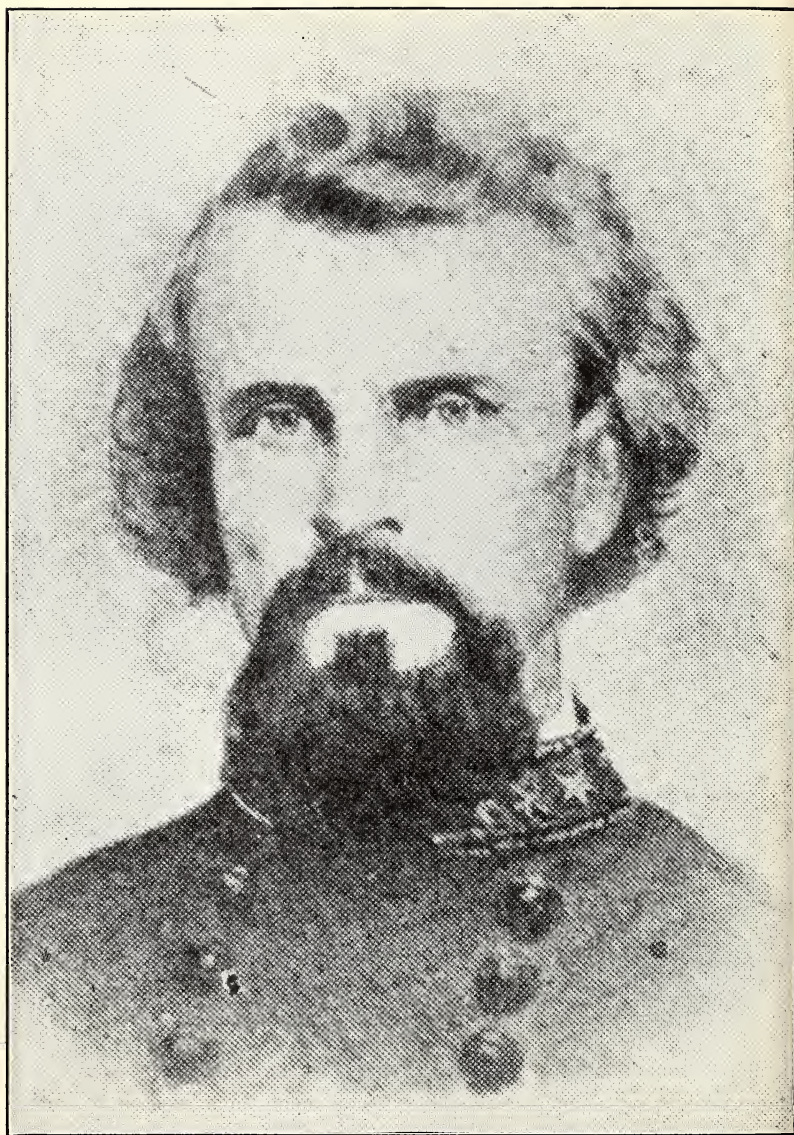
Under the leadership of Senator Charles Sumner of Massachusetts, the Civil Rights Bill was passed at this time, which authorized the Courts to compel the Southern people to admit negroes to all public places, and that negroes should be allowed to serve on juries. The Ku Klux Klan prevented the operation of this law in the South until the Supreme Court of the United States decided that this Civil Rights Bill was unconstitutional.

Contrary to the Constitution of the United States, the right of *habeas corpus* was suspended by the Military Commanders, and all these unconstitutional acts on the part of the United States Government made it imperative that the Ku Klux Klan press on to their goal, the saving of the South.

One of the chief reasons for the rapid growth of the Ku Klux Klan was the feeling of distress on the part of the Southern people for the capture of President Jefferson Davis, which occurred on the tenth of May, 1865. Mr. Davis was sent to Fortress Monroe, where he was held and charged with assassination in connection with the killing of President Lincoln. Mr. Davis was indicted in the United States Federal Court for the District of Virginia, and Horace Greeley, one of the greatest abolitionists, was one of his bondsmen. Many dates were set by the United States Government for the trial of Mr. Davis but the trial never came, for, on the 25th of December, 1868, President Johnson issued his last amnesty proclamation and, under this, Mr. Davis was released from bond and his case dismissed from

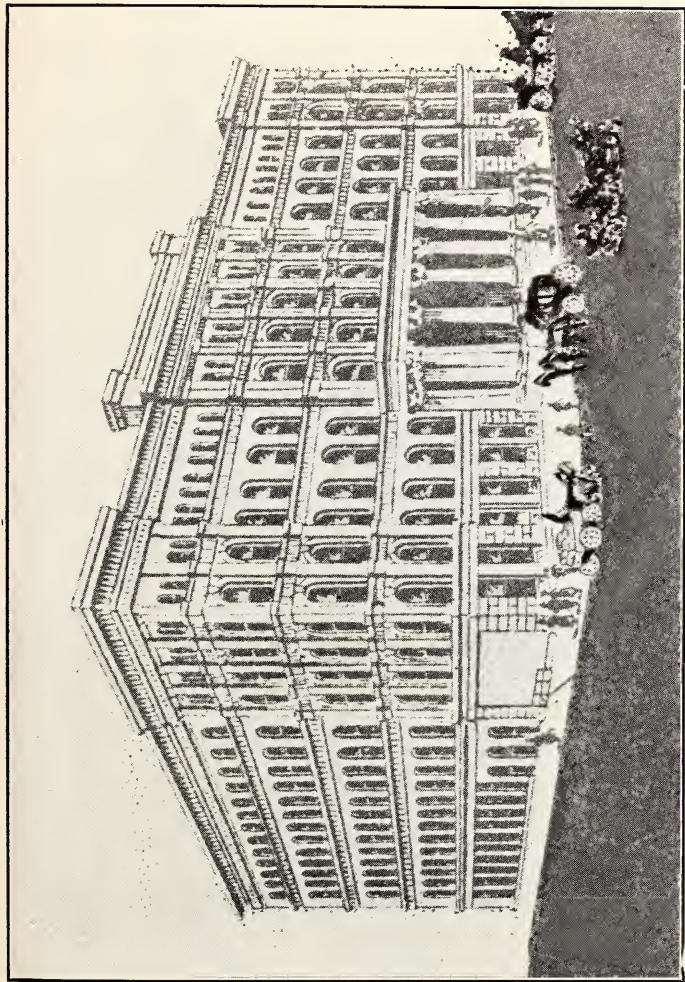






GENERAL NATHAN BEDFORD FORREST

Confederate States Army, "Wizard of the Saddle," "Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire" and the Ku Klux Klan. Delegate to the National Democratic Convention, July, 1868, at New York City.



The Maxwell House, Nashville, Tennessee, where the First Convention of the Ku Klux Klan was held May, 1867, and where the Invisible Empire was founded and General Nathan B. Forrest was made Grand Wizard.





Court. President Johnson had been informed by the Ku Klux Klan that they stood ready to attempt the rescue of Mr. Davis, should he be arraigned for trial. Captain John C. Lester was sent to deliver this message to President Johnson from General Nathan B. Forrest, and he told me of this fact, and it was restated to me by Major James R. Crowe and Captain John B. Kennedy, all of them originators of the Ku Klux Klan.

THE FOLLOWING ORDER WAS THE ONLY ONE  
WRITTEN BY GENERAL FORREST

HEADQUARTERS OF THE  
"INVISIBLE EMPIRE"

DISMAL ERA, 4TH GREEN DAY,  
LAST HOUR, C.A.R.N.

(October 20, 1869.)

GENERAL ORDER No. 1.

WHEREAS, The Order of the K. K. K. is in some localities being perverted from its original honorable and patriotic purposes;

AND, WHEREAS, Such a perversion of the Order is in some instances defeating the very objects of its origin, and is becoming injurious instead of subservient to the public peace and public safety for which it was intended, and in some cases is being used to achieve personal benefit and private purposes, and to satiate private revenge by means of its masked features;

AND, WHEREAS, Public sentiment is against a masked organization in the country;

AND, WHEREAS, Their masked features offer an opportunity to bad men outside of the Order to depredate and outrage the people in our name;

AND, WHEREAS, A few disobedient and bad men have gotten into the Order through imprudence and otherwise, and whose conduct under mask is a disgrace to the good name and honorable reputation of the Order:

It is therefore ordered and decreed, that the masks and costumes of this Order be entirely abolished and destroyed. And every Grand Cyclops shall assemble the men of his Den and require them to destroy in his presence every article of his mask and costume and at the same time shall destroy his own. And every man who shall refuse to do so shall be deemed an enemy of this Order, and shall be treated accordingly. And every man who shall hereafter be seen in mask or costume, shall not be known or recognized as a member of this Order, but shall be deemed an enemy of the same, and for such offense shall suffer the extreme penalty of the law.

*This is not to be understood to dissolve the Order of the Ku Klux Klan, but it is hereby held more firmly together and more faithfully bound to each other in any emergency that may come.*

All demonstrations are positively prohibited until they are ordered by a Grand Titan or higher authority.

The disarming of negroes, except when they may



be arming and assembling for insurrectionary purposes, is positively prohibited.

And the whipping of negroes or white men is also prohibited. This will not be allowed.

All interference in the domestic affairs of families is prohibited. Such is a prostitution of the Order from its high and public purposes.

The use of the Order for the achievement of personal benefit and the gratification of private revenge, is in all cases prohibited. This Order has nothing to do with the personal difficulties or private transactions of men. Such is perversion of the Order.

The interference with any man on account of his political opinions is wrong and positively forbidden.

The terrifying of men to prevent them from collecting their debts, or for any similar purpose, is prohibited under the severest penalty. This is a disgrace to the Order, and never was for a moment the purpose of the same—it being a public protective institution and nothing else.

The breaking and invading of jails for the abduction and execution of criminals is positively and under all circumstances prohibited. Any one who shall write letters in the name of this Order to terrify men for the accomplishment of personal designs shall be severely punished.

All demonstrations are positively prohibited until ordered by the authority aforesaid. The profoundest quiet and deepest secrecy concerning everything that relates to the Order, shall, at all times be maintained. Any man who shall violate this Order shall

be deemed an enemy to the Order, and shall suffer the extreme penalty of the law. We must protect our good name and honor from the disgrace that a few bad men may desire to bring upon us. And any man who shall expose this Order or any of the members of the same, shall suffer the extreme penalty of the law as heretofore prescribed.

Every Cyclops will destroy this Order as soon as read to every member of their Den and Staff.

By command of

THE GRAND WIZARD.

First Genii,

Acting Grand Scribe,

This order as above given was presented to me by Major Robert Donnell, who was Grand Scribe of the "Invisible Empire" in 1869, for this history, and he stated that the Ku Klux Klan was not disbanded until 1877, but this order was General Forrest's method of misleading those who were attempting to dissolve it after the Anti-Ku Klux Act was passed.

## VII.

### PRESIDENT JOHNSON'S POLICY.

Following Lincoln's death in 1865, President Johnson was confronted with the restoration of the Southern States to the Union and with the problems of reconstruction.

His policy was "that the seceding States not having succeeded in their separation from the Union, had lost their Constitutional rights only while engaged in war," and that the surrender of General Robert E. Lee gave them their anti-bellum status; and that they should at once become a part of the Union, but he was bitter against the leading Confederates, and had Jefferson Davis and other Southerners arrested.

President Johnson, however, was a Democrat, and above all, he believed in the United States Constitution and did his best with the situation which confronted him, to uphold it.

His policy aroused very bitter opposition throughout the North and caused denunciation in the Halls of Congress, and brought about the controversy between the President and Congress. Congress vented its fury against this just policy by enactment of articles of impeachment against President Johnson.

Congress asserted that by the act of secession the States recently engaged in war had forfeited all their rights under the Constitution;—not having acknowledged their rebellion until forced to do so at the point of a bayonet, and that they should be made territorial possessions governed by Congress until the Southern people should regard themselves as sufficiently humbled.

Congress passed the “Civil Rights” Bill and the “Freedman’s Bureau” Bill, and President Johnson sent a message to Congress in which he said that they embodied unconstitutional intrusion of the Federal government into the affairs of the States, and were a great trend towards centralization of government.

The discontent over the President’s liberal reconstruction policy needed only a breath to bring about the effort of his enemies to impeach him. On Feb. 18, 1868, President Johnson sent Edwin M. Stanton an order removing him from office, and naming Lorenzo Thomas, Secretary of War. Stanton was appointed by President Lincoln in 1862, and it was doubtful whether he could claim protection of the act against summary ejection by the President. The house voted on Feb. 24th and adopted a resolution that the President be impeached of “high crimes and misdemeanors in office.”

The effort to impeach Johnson was emphasized by the choice of the extremest Radicals in Congress selected to prosecute his impeachment—Stevens, Butler, Boutwell, Williams and Logan; the other

two members were conservative, Bingham and Wilson.

The Radicals employed every means to impeach President Johnson, and any man in Congress who did not declare himself in favor of impeachment was spied upon and denounced in the newspapers, and in the General Conference of the Methodist-Episcopal Church North.

This interference on the part of the Church was the first cause of arousing the right thinking people of the North to the dangerous situation in the government at Washington, and was one of the contributing causes of the failure of impeachment.

The vote on the impeachment of President Johnson was May 16, 1868 and resulted in "Not guilty." Two-thirds majority being necessary for conviction he was acquitted by *one vote*.

The failure of Congress to impeach President Johnson was due to the votes of seven Senators: Fessenden, Fowler, Grimes, Ross, Henderson, Trumbull, and Van Winkle.

The people of the North who had been engaged in their commercial affairs seemed to have been asleep during these years when the government at Washington was drifting on the rocks, and by these impeachment proceedings they were suddenly awakened to the dangers at hand.

At this time there existed a branch of the Union League at Washington, called the "Loyal League," composed of Radical politicians who were sending bands of men throughout the South who were imita-



ting the Ku Klux Klan and were instructed to commit crimes and to foment all kinds of disorder and confusion to make it impossible for President Johnson to fulfill his office successfully.

"Cupid" recognizes no battle-lines, and many of the Federal officers and soldiers had won the hearts and hands of Southern girls during their occupation of the South.

One instance which bears directly on the Ku Klux Klan was the marriage of a Federal General, Jesse J. Phillips, to one of the most brilliant young women, of the South, a widow, Mrs. Virginia Davis Harris, of Athens, Ala., after the close of the war. The General's business frequently took him to Washington where his splendid war record gave him great prestige.

On one occasion they were invited to a meeting of the "Loyal League," which was meeting in the home of one of the members of Congress.

During this meeting it was decided that the "Loyal League" name would be changed to the Ku Klux Klan, and a hideous regalia be adopted, and that they would send bands of men to imitate the real Ku Klux Klan, and spread terror and destruction to life and property throughout the South and bring back reports to Washington that the genuine Ku Klux Klan was responsible for it all.

This decision so horrified the General and his Southern wife, that they soon retired from the meeting and he declined to join the "Loyal League." He realized that something must be done to save the



CAPTAIN ROBERT ANDERSON McCLELLAN  
One of the founders of the Athens, Alabama Ku Klux Klan  
and a Grand Cyclops.



entire country from the treasonable schemes of these Radical politicians who were planning to undermine the government. His Southern wife appealed to him to help her save her loved ones of the Southland from such diabolism.

She told her husband that she knew President Johnson personally as he had once lived in Athens, Alabama, and she suggested that she call on him and report this scheme to him. He agreed with her that it might be a good idea and might give the President a deeper insight into the dangers already besetting his administration.

Mrs. Philips was received graciously by President Johnson, when the usher made it known to him that she was from Athens, Alabama, where he had lived when a young man.

President Johnson was appalled at the information she gave him and assured her that as far as possible he would not consent to the illegal measures then being enacted against the South which were delaying the restoring of the Union.

Previous to this, President Johnson had been making speeches which pleased the Radicals because he would abuse the South and would lose his temper and cause him to be ridiculed; suddenly, he quit all abuse of the Southern aristocrat, began to realize his great responsibility, and disappointed the Radicals by taking a firmer stand in his determination to readmit the States to the Union.

He said to General John A. Logan that the report brought him by General and Mrs. Philips of the



treason plotted against the Southern people by the "Loyal League" had shown him the situation in a new light. While he sent agents to investigate, General Grant being one of them, he attached very little importance to the truth of them, as Grant's report was so meagre it was almost worthless.

After Mrs. Philips had seen the President, she left without delay for her former home in the South to inform the members of the Ku Klux Klan of this reign of terror planned by the bogus Ku Klux Klan in Washington, and of President Johnson's astonishment that members of his Cabinet and of Congress, should be the instigators of it.

The Ku Klux Klan already knew that there were impostors trying to imitate them. But soon after this became known to them, they called in consultation General Forrest and he met them at the Athens headquarters. A vigilance committee was appointed to parole every road and be prepared to arrest men in disguise who could not give the Ku Klux Klan pass-words and grip. The advent of this bogus Ku Klux Klan emphasized the fact that no one but the Ku Klux themselves were in possession of the grip and pass-word, so the bogus klans could be easily detected.

President Johnson could not hold his stand against the Radical Congress, and soon after this Congress assumed the reconstruction of the Southern States and destroyed the State governments already operating and the people of the South were yet to go through the most diabolical era, and drink deep of



the cup of sorrow before her Senators and Representatives were allowed to take their seats in the Congress of the United States, and the States restored to their proper place in the Union.

President Johnson wished to be guided by the supposed policies of President Lincoln and although he failed, many of Lincoln's own party thought he could not have done any better with such a Radical Congress to deal with.

The South was divided into military districts and the work of both Lincoln and Johnson regarding the restoring of the South to the Union was suddenly undone by Congress which is directly responsible for the Union being dissolved for many years, and but for the Ku Klux Klan, that state of affairs might be in existence today.

The Radical party wished to keep the South in subjection to strengthen their party by enfranchising the negroes and disfranchising the white men. So they suddenly discharged all men who held the civil offices in the South and put "carpet-baggers" in their places and this condition continued for several years.

One instance of a legally elected Southerner being summarily ousted occurred in the fall of 1868, in Limestone County, Ala., when Captain John B. McClellan, a Confederate soldier who had lost his right arm during the Civil War, was displaced by Silas Thurlow, a carpet-bagger, as Probate Judge of the county.

The records of the court will show that at the close of business on Sept. 29, 1868, Judge McClellan's

signature was attached to legal papers, and next morning Silas Thurlow arrived in Athens and at the point of the bayonet in the hands of Federal soldiers, began signing all legal documents.

Judge McClellan was a Ku Klux and the treatment accorded him greatly incensed the Klan. In November following this there was a large parade of the Ku Klux Klan in Huntsville, Ala., and Silas Thurlow was killed on the streets.

Eye-witnesses testified at the Ku Klux hearings of the Committee of Congress afterwards held at Huntsville, that he was shot by the negro soldiers who were stationed in the Court House. A Federal general, who was in the hotel across the street and could see the shooting from his window, testified that the Ku Klux Klan was not at that time on that part of the public square.

Judge William Richardson testified at the hearing that the shot which killed Thurlow came from the Court House, and not from the direction of the Ku Klux Klan members to whom he was talking.

This occurred after midnight and when Thurlow was told that he was dying he said he wanted someone to pray for him, but knew there wasn't a Rebel preacher in that town who would do it, and a gentleman went to the home of Mr. Ross, a minister of the gospel, who came immediately, and prayed for him.

This Huntsville riot, and those occurring in New Orleans, Memphis, and smaller towns, furnished the Radicals at Washington with new material against the South, and the Northern papers published ac-

counts under glaring headlines: "Southern Outrages."

The "Eutaw, Alabama, Riot" in 1870, in which the Ku Klux Klan took a part, and a band of them from Mississippi killed Alexander Boyd, who was County Solicitor, was the cause of great excitement throughout the country. Mr. Boyd had released from jail three negroes who had killed a very popular man, Dr. Samuel Snoddy.

The Ku Klux Klan warned Boyd to leave town, and when he refused to do so they went to the hotel where he was living. A fight ensued in which he was killed. Mr. Boyd's tombstone in the Mesopotamia Cemetery, Eutaw, Alabama, erected by his uncle, Judge William Miller, is inscribed "Murdered by Ku Klux."

In Hale County, Alabama, Jan. 19, 1871, in the middle of the night a negro aroused the town with the cry of "Ku Klux!" and he hastened to the room of Dr. Blackford who was the carpet-bag Probate Judge and warned him of their approach. Blackford escaped into the cemetery where he remained for several days.

At this time General Forrest was at Greensboro, Alabama, building the Selma and Memphis Railroad. He decided that he would lend the much-frightened man his protection, so he conferred with Blackford and made arrangements to purchase property he owned on condition that he resign the office and leave for parts unknown.

(Governor R. B. Lindsay appointed as Black-

ford's successor James M. Hobson, father of Captain Richmond Hobson.) After this great kindness on the part of the Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire, Dr. Blackford went to Washington and reported many falsehoods to officials there, charging the Ku Klux with outrages.

President Lincoln had to contend with Radicals all during the war, and Johnson fell heir to this condition. He did not cause it. The opinion of President Lincoln that Congress had no right to dictate on reconstruction was criticized by the Radicals.

The Radical propaganda to exclude the white men from representation at Washington and to form a black man's party in the South to strengthen the Republican party, caused Horace Greeley to say in the *New York Tribune*:

"If they carry out their plans to form a black man's party in the South, they will strike Republicanism a blow far heavier than Democrats can deal."

The Ku Klux Klan reports sent to Washington classified all violence in the South, under four heads: killings, shootings, outrages and whippings; and every case of crime committed from 1865 to 1871 was listed in these reports as Ku Klux outrages.

According to these reports it would appear that all who met violent death were Radicals or negroes, and the wretched conditions that prevailed seemed more than human endurance could be called on to bear, and for several years the people had been hoping and praying that the government at Washington,



or that some power on earth would come to their rescue.

The Ku Klux Klan, seeing no relief in sight, renewed their determination to save the South or die in the attempt. (The fulfillment of this determination for "white supremacy" came between the years 1890 to 1902 when new election laws and new State constitutions excluded the negro from the polls and a white man's government was a reality, and the Ku Klux Klan had solidified the South politically for all time to come.)

Negro suffrage while it lasted had to be upheld by military rule and at last the Ku Klux Klan, caused both to fail. The success of the Ku Klux Klan was accomplished in the face of the Ku Klux Act, 1871, which gave President Grant despotic military power, and authorized him to declare a state of war if he deemed it necessary. He used this power in 1871, and declared martial law in South Carolina.

The Ku Klux Klan was not organized for political purposes as some unfair Northern writers contend to this day, but it was driven into this role by the persecution of the Southern people by the Republican party in power, which misrepresented conditions in the South.

When Governor Andrew Johnson made his second race for governor of Tennessee he was opposed by Merideth P. Gentry who was the candidate of the "Knownothing" or American party whose slogan was "America for Americans." In 1855 this movement



“Knownothingism” spread very rapidly over the country, and a presidential ticket was nominated.

This party was founded on the position taken by many men that the Roman Catholic church through their priests were interfering with the appointments of men to office, their efforts being to have Catholics given the preference and this situation led to the organizing of the “Knownothings,” the name originated by its members being asked about its activities replying, “I don’t know.”

Andrew Johnson spoke four hours against this movement in his race for governor and said “this party would shut out Methodists and Presbyterians from holding office,” and the party never revived again in Tennessee, and failed in electing the presidential ticket and soon went out of existence.

President Andrew Johnson’s term was ended when U. S. Grant was elected, and he returned to his home in Tennessee, greatly disappointed that all the States were not in the Union. He was a Union man, and did go against his State when secession came, and was the military governor of Tennessee during the Civil War, but his effort to help the Southern people in being restored to the Union called for their expressions of gratitude.

Mr. Johnson was governor of Tennessee for two terms previous to the Civil War and was considered an honest man in his convictions, and he believed in the Constitution of the United States with all his soul.

When Mr. Johnson was inaugurated governor of Tennessee in 1853 he said in his address: “Democracy

and religion are hand-maidens to each other. They are two converging lines extending from earth to heaven, where they unite in theocracy."

Ex-President Andrew Johnson was elected to the United States Senate in 1875. On March 22, 1875 his opportunity came to make his stand on the Constitution in the Louisiana case. The Congressional Committee read the report:

1. Resolved that there is no state government at present existing in the state of Louisiana. The committee report that it is the duty of Congress to act in the premises.

Mr. Johnson replied to this report in a speech in which he said "Is this not monstrous in a free government? Is the president the United States?"

The Constitution says, "The United States shall guarantee to every state in the union, a republican form of government," and the interference with the State of Louisiana today by President Grant is palpable violation of the Constitution of the United States.

When we go into our theory of government, we find that all the powers are derived from the people.

*The people wear the crown.*

Then as patriots, as men who love their country, who love a government of law, let us unite as a band of brothers to make one more effort in this period to restore the Constitution of the United States.

Andrew Johnson died on July 31, 1875 and the Union was still *dissolved* and the Ku Klux Klan heard the echo of this speech and fulfilled his wish

and finished his avowed task of restoring the Union. Andrew Johnson was a Mason.

It is said President Johnson never made a speech without speaking of the United States flag and the Constitution and had expressed a wish that a flag be his winding-sheet, and his head-rest the Constitution. These wishes were carried out. A handsome flag was wrapped around his body and an old worn copy of the Constitution he had read placed under his head, where he rests at Greenville, Tennessee.

In the Opinion given by Senator John B. Henderson during the trial for impeachment of President Andrew Johnson he said: "If an act to be impeachable must be indictable, then it must be urged that every act which is indictable must be impeachable, but this has never been pretended."

Senator Henderson said in regard to the order issued by President Johnson removing from office Secretary of War Edwin M. Stanton: "The Constitution is silent as to the power of removing officers. It will be observed that ample provision is made for filling offices, but no expressed provision is made for vacating them."

All the authorities have agreed that the power of removing all appointed officers except Judges of the Supreme Court who have held by fixed tenure was vested in the President and could not be withdrawn by law. It was also a fact that an officer could only hold for and during the term of the President by whom he may have been appointed.

"Senator Henderson said in this Opinion "The

question is simply one of guilt under the charges as presented by the House and I cannot in justice to the laws of the land, in justice to the country or to my own sense of right render any other response to the several articles of impeachment than a verdict 'Not guilty.' ”

Senator Henderson in this immortal opinion helped to save to our country republican form of government as given to us by the Constitution of the United States and by his masterly leadership on this trying occasion succeeded in convincing a sufficient number of senators to prevent the impeachment of President Andrew Johnson by one vote, and thereby saving the executive branch of our government.

## VIII.

### THE FEDERAL KU KLUX ACTS.

When General U. S. Grant became President of the United States in 1869, and in a speech said: "Let us have peace," the people of the South were hopeful that they would be freed from carpet-bag and negro rule; but they were doomed to disappointment. For in 1870 President Grant approved the first of the Federal Ku Klux Acts, and the second, in 1871.

In part the Act read as follows:

"If two or more persons shall band or conspire together, or go in disguise upon the public highway, or upon the premises of another; with intent to violate any provision of this Act, or injure, oppress, threaten or intimidate any citizen with the intention to prevent or hinder his free exercise or enjoyment of any right or privilege, granted or secured to him by the Constitution of the United States, or because of his having exercised the same; such persons shall be guilty of a felony."

The Act of 1871 provides that: "If two or more persons within any State or territory of the United States shall conspire together, or go in disguise upon the public highway or upon the premises for the purpose either directly or indirectly, of depriving such



persons of the equal protection of the Laws, each and every person so offending shall be deemed guilty of a high crime.

"When such a conspiracy is proven to exist, and when it further appears that the accused was a member of it, the Law holds him responsible for whatever is done by his co-conspirators in furtherance of the objects of the corrupt combination, though he himself did not advise the particular act or participate in it, and, although he was completely ignorant of the intention to commit it, and of the fact of its commission."

Growing out of these Acts were the famous hearings held by a sub-committee of Congress in Alabama and South Carolina, Mississippi and other States, and at Washington, D. C.

The trials in Alabama were held in the United States District Court, Northern District, sitting at Huntsville, beginning in May, 1872. Many persons were indicted for violation of the Enforcement Acts of Congress known as the "Ku Klux Laws" and a great many of the most distinguished men of the South were prosecuted by "carpet-bag" District Attorneys of the United States.

The reports of these trials were sent to the government at Washington, and led to the appointment by Congress of a committee to investigate conditions in the South, and the sub-committee proceeded to Huntsville, Alabama.

Among the men who were arrested and tried were members of the spurious Ku Klux Klan which had

been formed by the "Loyal League" at Washington to foment trouble in the South. When these counterfeit Ku Klux were tried, as in the case of those prosecuted by Captain William Richardson at Huntsville, Ala., when he was employed by the real Ku Klux Klan, and obtained convictions of these men, the Federal authorities immediately freed them.

Many other citizens who were not members of the Ku Klux Klan were arrested, convicted and sent to the Federal prison.

Thirteen individuals of these spurious *Ku Klux Klans* were convicted in Alabama, and one pleaded guilty.

The trials and the carpet-baggers in charge of them were bitterly assailed in the Northern papers at that time, for the Northern public began to realize the injustice of the Ku Klux Laws and of the government at Washington, and to see the failure of the Law in reaching the real Ku Klux Klan, and that it was reacting against their own agents and causing them to be convicted and sent to the Federal prisons.

These investigations of the sub-committee and trials of the Ku Klux Klan awakened the whole country and the thinking men of the North realized the serious situation in the South and they were very impatient with the government at Washington.

The Ku Klux Klan were being forced by these circumstances to add to their numbers and become more closely affiliated for the common good.

On June 27, 1872, the *Mail and Advertiser*,

(Montgomery, Ala.,) summed up the situation under the caption, "The Grant Platform."

"The National Statutes enforced are odious, to break the spirit of our people and make them slaves to Federal power; that peaceable citizens are snatched away from their business and homes and taken to other States in violation of private right and the Constitution of the land; and that the spy, the bayonet, the suborned witness, bribed jury, and partisan judge have full sway over the lives and rights of millions of people; that the whole legislation in Congress in regard to the South has been one grand and infamous purpose to subordinate the white man to the negro; the Reconstruction Acts, the Fourteenth Amendment, the Ku Klux Acts, all discriminated by reason of race and political creed—that the Ku Klux 'pretended evils' are Ku Klux goblins, to correct which the government resorted to unconstitutional laws and interfered with rights not surrendered by the people to either State or National Government."

The investigations of the sub-committee cost the United States *government many millions of dollars and comprise many volumes of testimony, and not one of the real Ku Klux Klan was ever convicted.* They tried to convict them by every ruse, by false witnesses, and by having men appear against them who held a grudge because they had been refused admittance to the Ku Klux Klan, and also many ignorant negroes were paid to give accounts of beatings and whippings which had never occurred.

One instance was of a negro woman who lived on the plantation of Major John B. Floyd of Limestone County, Alabama, who told that the Ku Klux Klan had beaten her baby and herself; and when the real Ku Klux Klan went to investigate, they found the baby alive and well, under the cabin floor and brought it to Huntsville to prove the falsehood. This circumstance caused many of the Federal investigators to change their minds regarding the Ku Klux Klan, and led them to giving truthful testimony at Washington.

No matter how much this sub-committee discovered concerning the alleged unlawful Ku Klux Klan, the witnesses, General James H. Clanton among the number, who was Grand Dragon of the Realm of Alabama, were ready with facts concerning the acts of the spurious Ku Klux Klan and other carpet-baggers to show cause why the real Ku Klux Klan was needed unless conditions improved.

The Joint Select Committee to enquire into the Conditions of Affairs in the late Insurrectionary States, was unable to discover any written order, pre-script, oath or data which had ever been used by the real Ku Klux Klan, for the reason that it was against their policy to print anything; all orders being delivered orally, except General Order No. 1, of Den No. 1, and General Order No. 1, "Invisible Empire."

All the committees of Congress, all the Federal attorneys appointed to investigate the Ku Klux Klan, all the bogus Ku Klux Klans combined, failed utterly to find any documentary evidence against the origi-







Stone Marker at Athens, Alabama, erected by the Alabama Division,  
 United Daughters of the Confederacy.  
 (Contributed for this History  
 by Miss Mary Mason)

nal Ku Klux Klan; and that which was produced was not genuine.

General Nathan B. Forrest, when being examined by this Congressional Committee, proved himself a match for the men who conducted the hearings in Washington, and not one word from General Forrest revealed the secrets, the passwords or the grips of the Ku Klux Klan, for by his masterly strategy in foiling these shafts of questioning so that none of the secrets of the real Ku Klux Klan were learned, he added laurels to the fame he had attained in the Civil War for his elusive tactics which caused General W. T. Sherman to offer fifty thousand dollars reward and a Major-Generalship to any Federal soldier who would kill or capture him, and it goes without saying that no one received this reward. This untrained genius of war has been compared to Alexander, Hannibal, Cæsar and Napoleon, and as the leader of the Ku Klux Klan his name stands for the justification of the men and women of the "Invisible Empire."

General Frank P. Blair and Mr. Beck of New York of the sub-committee of Congress, sitting at Huntsville, Ala., had summoned before it men of the highest character—men whose social and political standing was unquestioned at the time, and who in later years filled the highest and most responsible positions in the government of our country.

Many of the Federal officers who were called upon to testify before this sub-committee testified in favor of the real Ku Klux Klan and sustained the Demo-



crats. Among these was Captain Lionel W. Day of the United States Army who was clerk of the United States District Court for Northern Alabama at that time.

When the biographies of the Ku Klux Klansmen are read, you will understand why the crimes attributed to them could not be laid at their door, and at the same time, all blame must not be charged to the representatives of the *spurious* Ku Klux Klans, or to the negroes for the crimes committed, for, among the stirring events of the reconstruction period in Alabama, none were more dreadful than the raids, thefts and murders by bands of Tories.

The account of these home-bred brands of evil men would never have been told only when law and order had no restraining influence upon many men and an outraged public sentiment had no power, and the authorities at Washington who were supposed to keep order in the Southern States, were even helpless against these bi-products of the Civil War who kept the people in terror, by treason against their own homes and people.

The people of the South were beset by these bands of marauders within their own borders, by deserters from the Confederate Army, by men who had to be drafted into the Confederate Army, by men taking advantage of the Ku Klux Klan disguise, by the Federal authorities' inability to cope with the situation, and by the actual attitude of the government at Washington who were plotting and scheming to keep the South in a state of war for at least thirty years.

With these conditions, is it any wonder that the Ku Klux Klan continued and grew in strength?

The Ku Klux Klan, during the early 70's, directed their efforts to assisting the Federal troops and authorities in bringing to justice such of these men as they could, regardless of their affiliations.

The most notable of the bands who terrorized Lauderdale and other counties of Alabama, was led by Tom Clark, who was a distinctive product of a war-time outlaw. He had lived on the plantation of Governor Hugh McVay before the war. He was quiet and industrious, but when war came he would not enlist and was conscripted, and made a member of Company F, Fourth Alabama Cavalry.

He deserted and became a member of the Sixth Tennessee, a Federal Regiment, which was commanded by Capt. Elias Thrasher, a home-made Yankee. Many of his men were lawless. Clark deserted this Tennessee regiment, taking with him many of these criminals and formed a band of Tories and began his reign of terror in North Alabama, having them commit rapine, murder and robberies, and escaped punishment for years.

The Ku Klux Klan captured two of Clark's band and took them before the Federal authorities under the command of Captain DeFord at Florence, Alabama, who gave them a military trial and had them shot.

This is but one of the many instances where the Ku Klux Klan made every effort to assist the Fed-

eral government in meting out justice, yet despite all their efforts no relief came from Washington.

Peaceable law-abiding negroes were often attacked by these bands of Tories and carpet-baggers, and the Ku Klux Klan went to their aid each time, taking with them the faithful negroes to aid them in the cause of justice, as Judge H. C. Jones did on one occasion, when with two pistols, and the assistance of his former slave, Emery Jones, he went to the rescue of a negro family named Poole, near Florence, Alabama, who had been cruelly attacked by Tom Clark's band.

These crimes were all charged in the North to the Ku Klux Klan, when there was positive proof that none of the band were Ku Klux, as shown by the court-martial and execution of Clark's men.

In 1872, Tom Clark was captured and taken to Florence, Alabama, for trial. Coincident with his arrest there was a series of robberies beginning at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, to Athens, Alabama, and culminating at Florence, where these robbers were captured and put in jail with Tom Clark. Public sentiment soon determined to mete out justice to these criminals without delay.

The horrible deeds of Tom Clark were still fresh in the minds of the people and they decided to hang him with the other robbers, who proved to be escaped criminals from Indiana.

These crimes were heralded through the Northern press as having been committed by the Ku Klux Klan. Was it any wonder that the men of the South,



composing the real Ku Klux Klan, were losing all patience with this misrepresentation?

A committee of the Ku Klux Klan went to Washington and explained fully to President Grant the existing conditions in the South, but he turned a deaf ear to all their appeals.

The Anti-Ku Klux Acts were said to be for the enforcement of the 14th and 15th Amendments, but they were really aimed at the Ku Klux Klan, the excuse being that the Ku Klux Klan would keep the negroes from voting. The effect of these enforcement Acts was to take over to the central government all the powers of the State governments relative to suffrage and elections.

The Ku Klux Klan tried in every possible way to impress the President and Congress that their activities would cease when relief should come to the South, but instead the above committee was appointed at Washington, and General Grant approved the Ku Klux Acts.

When the sub-committee of Congress was investigating the Ku Klux Klan, Senator Pratt said to Colonel Nicholas Davis, of Huntsville, Alabama, "I wish to read to you the preamble of the law approved Dec. 26, 1868, by the Alabama Radical Legislature, entitled 'An Act for the Suppression of Secret Organizations of men disguising themselves for the purpose of committing crimes and outrages.' I wish to read you the preamble of that law and ask you whether the state of things contained in it was true at the time this law was passed."

The law was read to Mr. Davis and his answer was, "I will tell you one thing. I never paid much attention to any law enacted by any such authority as that was."

Mr. Pratt said: "I am not asking you for your opinion of the law, but simply of the truth or untruth of the recitals of the Ku Klux Klan in that preamble."

Mr. Davis replied: "I believe that there was in 1868 a Ku Klux Klan in the State of Alabama and in Madison County, but I prefer that my testimony be restricted to things I know. I believe that now it is more unsafe for a man to be a Ku Klux Klansman here than it would be in New York. I believe it would be much safer for a man to put on a disguise in the city of New York where you live, Senator Pratt."

Mr. Pratt said: "You have told us that several times, and I do not ask to have it repeated oftener. But I want to ask you whether you saw published in the papers sometime in 1869 what purported to be an order emanating from the Cyclops of that organization disbanding it."

Mr. Davis: "I did not."

Mr. Pratt: "Did you ever hear of such an order?"

Mr. Davis: "I did not."

Mr. Pratt: "Were you a constant reader of the newspapers?"

Mr. Davis: "I can say that I am, but I never saw such an order."

Mr. Pratt: "And you have never heard of such an order?"

Mr. Davis: "No, sir, not until you mentioned it here."

Mr. Pratt: "Did you hear of such an order in 1869?"

Mr. Davis: "I never heard of it until you mentioned it."

Question: "Has there been any such thing as a Ku Klux Klan in this county in the last two years?"

Answer: "There have been men who *imitated* the Ku Klux Klan."

Question: "For what purpose?"

Answer: "To rob and thieve—without any politics in it—rob and thieve."

Question: "Was the Union League a political organization?"

Answer: "Yes, and they forbade me to speak here on this street. I am opposed to the organization of the Republican Party in Alabama."

Another prominent Limestone County, Alabama, man who was summoned by the minority on this subcommittee was Captain Daniel Coleman who was at that time solicitor of Limestone County. When asked by the chairman of this committee to state the condition in his county, he asked that the following account of a mass meeting held in Athens be inserted in the record, to show that the people were anxious for the restoration of order.

From the *Athens (Alabama) Post*:

"At a large and earnest meeting of the citizens of Limestone County, Ala., held in the Court House in the town of Athens on the 25th of Sept., 1871, in

pursuance to a call heretofore made, to protest against the outrages that have been committed and the lawlessness and crime which exist the following proceedings were held, to wit:

“On motion of Colonel T. J. McClellan, Major J. N. Malone, was elected chairman, and after a few able remarks, stating the object of the meeting and condemning lawlessness and crime, took the chair. On motion of Captain Daniel Coleman, Charles M. Hayes was appointed Secretary.

“On motion of Colonel L. R. Davis, the following preamble and resolutions were introduced, and after strong and eloquent speeches for their adoption were made by Luke Pryor, J. W. Carter, James E. Nunn, Captain Daniel Coleman, Judge William H. Walker, and Colonel T. J. McClellan were adopted by a strong hearty vote that carried conviction that the meeting was in earnest.

“WHEREAS: Crime and ruthless violation of law have increased to such an alarming extent in the county; therefore we, the people of Limestone County, have met together in solemn convention, to devise ways and means for the suppression of lawlessness and crime, to express our indignation of the recent outrages in the county, and to unite our effort for the maintenance of the supremacy of the law; therefore,

“RESOLVED: First, that we are in favor of ‘Law and Order’; and we pledge ourselves that we will obey and encourage obedience to all laws, state and national, to which we as citizens may be subject.



“Second: That great credit is due and we hereby give our thanks, to the officers of the law and to the people assisting them as ‘posses’ for the recent energetic arresting and attempting to arrest the violators of the law; and we promise to sustain them in all their efforts in the future to have the law enforced.

“Third: That we cordially endorse and approve the action of the commissioners’ court in employing additional counsel to assist the County Solicitor, Captain Daniel Coleman, and we give them *carte blanche* to do the same in the future whenever their judgment may so dictate.

“Fourth: That we approve the recent action of the county solicitor (Daniel Coleman) and we stand by him, and uphold him in the discharge of his duties.

“Fifth: That we are in dead earnest and that we mean what we say, when we declare that we intend by every means known to the law, ‘let it fall on whom it may’ to put down the lawlessness that now curses and blights the county.

“Sixth: That to this end we will form in our respective beats, committees in law and order—a sort of special police—whose duty it shall be to ferret out and bring to punishment under the law all violators of the law.

“Seventh: That we authorize and empower the commissioners’ court to use any means necessary to put down the crime of the county and to that end to make such appropriations as are essential to that purpose. And it is the sense of the meeting that the solicitor in view of the fact that he gets scarcely any-

thing, should be allowed compensation as the court shall determine is proper.

"On motion of Captain Coleman, the Secretary was directed to request the *Limestone News*, and the *Athens Post* to publish the proceedings after which the meeting adjourned 'sine die.'

"J. N. Malone, Pres.

"Chas. M. Hayes, Sec'y."

Captain Coleman emphasized in his testimony that spurious Ku Klux Klans and other agents were disturbing the peace in his county. He said that none of the violations of law in his county were committed by the real Ku Klux Klan. He stated that a Mr. Weir said he had been mistreated by men in disguise, but that it grew out of a personal difficulty he had had with a Mr. Blair.

The Chairman said to Captain Coleman: "Have you any reason to doubt Mr. Weir's statement that he was mistreated?"

Answer: "He wrote the newspapers up North that he had been killed, but I saw him after that. He came to Limestone County to live after the War."

Question: "For what was Birdsong murdered?"

Answer: "He wasn't murdered. He killed a man named McKee and fled. He and McKee had planned to steal horses and mules at a certain place. The next day the body of McKee was found, and in his saddlebags he had a disguise."

Question: "Did the disguise differ from the old-fashioned Ku Klux disguise?"

Answer: "I did not see this disguise; only heard it described. They certainly differed from the only Ku Klux I ever saw. Their disguises were entirely different."

Question: "When was that, Captain Coleman?"

Answer: "Let me see; the War closed in 1865. I think it was in the fall of 1866."

Question: "You may state the circumstances."

Answer: "Well, sir, it was at a picnic—what was called a moonlight picnic, in a beech-grove near Pulaski."

Question: "In Tennessee?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, there was a dance. There was a large circle of fine people gathered together, when these persons in mysterious garb came out of the woods and came upon the ground and danced to the music and would talk to those who would talk with them, disguising their voices. It seemed to be a thing of amusement. I never heard anything in connection with it as a political organization."

Question: "Not at that time?"

Answer: "At that time, no, sir."

By Mr. Buckley, of the Committee: "What was their disguise?"

Answer: "Well, sir, they had very tall hats, that seemed to be made of some stiff material, I could not tell what it was, but it was covered with spangles, with stars, and it was rather a pretty and showy costume. Their covering seemed to be a kind of talma or cloak thrown over their bodies, and then a tunic running down to their feet nearly."

Question: "Was that the first time you ever heard of the Ku Klux Klan?"

Answer: "Probably I had heard of the Ku Klux Klan a little before that, but that was the first time I ever saw them."

Question: "How long subsequently did that organization exist and operate in full vigor?"

Answer: "Subsequently, I do not know. The next time I saw them was in 1867."

Question: "Where was it you saw them in 1867?"

Answer: "I saw them in Athens."

Question: "In Limestone County?"

Answer: "In Athens."

Question: "How large a band?"

Answer: "Well, sir, one band consisted of six. The other band of about seventy-five or one hundred."

Question: "You may describe the occasion of their visit to Athens."

Answer: "One visit was one night as I came from the cars. I saw them just riding through the town. They stopped on the square and cut up a good many gyrations, or performances. I remember one of them took my hat off, and took it some distance. I thought he had gotten it for good, but he brought it back to me."

"The other visit was on the occasion of the Presidential election when they came in. We had some Federal soldiers, *just to keep order*; they rode up and asked for the Mayor of the town.

"We were apprehending some disturbance at the polls. A great many people were in the town and we



did not know but there might be some collision. One of the men in disguise asked the Mayor (I was present,) if he apprehended any disturbance during the day. He said, 'No,' he thought everything would be quiet.

"The lieutenant of the Federal guard came up and spoke to the Ku Klux Klan and one of them turned to the lieutenant and the Mayor and said, 'If they don't keep good order, Lieutenant, just scratch on the ground, and I'll be with you.'" (This was said by Mr. W. R. (Dick) Pryor, the author has been informed.)

Question: "This visit was when the election occurred?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, that is when the large body appeared."

Question: "From your first knowledge of the Order until 1868, was two years and a half, was it not?"

Answer: "Yes, sir."

Question: "During that time did this organization do any mischief in Limestone County?"

Answer: "No, sir, none that I heard of. I heard no complaint made."

Question: "No outrages were perpetrated upon persons to your knowledge or from information that you derived from others?"

Answer: "No, sir, I do not know of any outrages that were laid to the account of the Ku Klux Klan at that time."

Question: "Was that society ever known by any

other name than the Ku Klux Klan in Limestone and adjoining counties?"

Answer: "No, sir, I never heard of its being known by any other name."

Question: "Did you ever hear of an organization known as the 'Invisible Circle'?"

Answer: "No, sir."

Question: "'The Knights of the White Camelia'?"

Answer: "No, sir, I never heard of them."

Question: "Or the 'White Brotherhood'?"

Answer: "No, sir."

Question: "Have you ever heard of the 'Pale Faces'?"

Answer: "No, sir."

Question: "Have you ever known of an organization known as the 'Constitutional Union Guards'?"

Answer: "No, sir."

Question: "You think the body of men that compose the Ku Klux organization never assumed any other name or were known by any other name than Ku Klux?"

Answer: "No, sir, they never assumed any other name."

Question: "Are the Ku Klux Southern or Northern men?"

Answer: "They are all Southern men."

Question: "You spoke, Mr. Coleman, of bands of disguised men whose objects are stealing, murdering and burning gins, etc. About how many bands have you known?"

Answer: "The one I prosecuted a few months ago,

signed themselves to a paper they posted up 'Men of Justice.' "

Question: "Was not the law to suppress the Ku Klux Klan, bitterly assailed at the time of its passage?"

Answer: "I did not approve it myself, for I knew of no outrages then by the Ku Klux Klan, and the expression generally was, it had a salutary effect on criminals."

Question: "What do you know about disguised men taking the negroes' guns away from them?"

Answer: "I know of no band taking the negroes' guns, except the ones I prosecuted."

This testimony given by Captain Coleman regarding these counterfeit Ku Klux Klans which were sent from the North to create the disturbances, harass and annoy the people into deeds of retaliation, was typical of the conditions throughout the South; and the sub-committee soon found that the laws passed against the real Ku Klux Klan were operating against the agents of the government who had been sent for that purpose.

Another instance of the injustice of these trials was the case of bogus Ku Klux being prosecuted and convicted by Captain William Richardson, at Huntsville, Alabama, and they were immediately discharged by the Federal authorities, when it was learned that they were "carpet-baggers."

This fact is stated in the testimony given by Captain Richardson before the sub-committee at Huntsville, in the famous Ku Klux hearings.

Captain Daniel Coleman and his brothers, Lieutenant Frank Coleman and Dr. Ruffin Coleman vowed vengeance on General Jesse J. Phillips, United States Army, who while plundering their home at Athens, Alabama, demanded of their mother to give him her false teeth because they were set on a gold plate, and when she refused, he commanded one of his officers to hold her head while he took them out, and he carried them away.

General Phillips came to Athens, Alabama, in 1867 and the Ku Klux Klan "Den" of which they were members found out their intention to challenge the General for a duel.

The "Den" took the three Coleman men to the residence of Dr. Nicholas Davis Richardson and guarded them for days until the General left the state, and when they still thought they would pursue him to avenge his insult to their mother, they were told by the Ku Klux Klan that if they broke their paroles as Confederate soldiers that they would expel them from the Ku Klux Klan.

They then gave their word of honor to refrain from this act of vengeance however justifiable it was in the minds of the other men, for the Ku Klux Klan had determined as far as possible to prevent their own members from wreaking vengeance, or otherwise making trouble.

Captain Coleman told me he was always glad that the Ku Klux Klan prevented him from this deed as it distressed his mother greatly when she learned how nearly they had begun another Civil War, for she was





Athens Female Institute, second chartered college for women in the world, Athens, Alabama, which was guarded eleven years by the Ku Klux Klan to prevent the United States authorities from confiscating it for a mixed school of negroes and whites and is still a leading educational institution.



highly loved and respected and not only her son but others would have joined in the deed.

Daniel Coleman was born September 7, 1838, at Athens, Limestone County, Alabama, and died at Huntsville, Ala., June 29, 1906. He was the son of Daniel and Elizabeth Lockhart (Peterson) Coleman. He was descended from Col. Richard Cocke who came to Virginia and was a member of the House of Burgesses and who was offered the command of an army by King George in the Revolutionary War but refused and fought with the Virginians. Col. Cocke was descended from the Coke family who crossed the English channel with William the Conqueror and the first one who came to England was an officer in the Battle of Hastings. On one occasion when this officer had lost a battle he called to the officer on the other side and said, "Come and take my sword, I'll never surrender." Captain Coleman's grandfather, Daniel Coleman, was an officer in the Revolutionary war from Maryland and his sword which he used then was still in the possession of the Coleman family at Athens, Ala., until it was taken away by Federal soldiers during the Civil War. On the Coleman line, Captain Coleman is descended from the Key family of Maryland from which Francis Scott Key, the author of the "Star Spangled Banner" was descended. Captain Coleman was a gallant Confederate soldier, had several horses killed under him during the Civil War and made many narrow escapes from death. He was a successful business man after the War and resided in Huntsville, Ala.,

until his death. He married Miss Claude LeVert by whom he is survived. Captain Coleman was one of the Assistant Judicial officers of the Invisible Empire and was one of the founders of the Athens, Alabama, Ku Klux Klan.

General Nathan Bedford Forrest when testifying before the Joint Congressional Committee inquiring into the Affairs in the Insurrectionary States at Washington, D. C., June 27, 1871, made the following statements when being examined by the Chairman, Mr. Beck: "You say that whatever organization of the Ku Klux Klan, or anything else, took place in the region with which you are familiar, it was gotten up through fear of the militia, and was the result of that state of things?"

General Forrest: "That is my understanding of it."

Question: "And for protection of themselves, when the law was considered powerless?"

Answer: "According to my understanding, the organization was intended entirely as a protection to the people, to enforce the laws, and protect the people against outrages."

Question: "Without regard to whether they were perpetrated by democrats or republicans?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, I do not think that would make any difference."

Question: "Do you think the Ku Klux Klan was begun in Middle Tennessee?"

Answer: "Yes, in Middle Tennessee. I have no idea who started it."

Question: "Have you never heard?"



Answer: "It has been said I originated it, that I started it."

Question: "Is that true?"

Answer: "No, sir, it is not."

Question: "Did not the Ku Klux Klan admit boys?"

Answer: "I do not know, but I do not think they admitted boys."

Question: "What is your knowledge on the subject?"

Answer: "My information was that they admitted no man who was not a gentleman, and a man who could be relied upon to act discreetly; not men who were in the habit of drinking; boisterous men, or men liable to commit error or wrong, or anything of that sort; that is what I understood."

General Forrest stated before this committee "that in the event of a war between the races in the South that the white people of the North would come to the assistance of the white people of the South if they have the same feelings toward their own race that the Southern people have, and I have no reason to believe that they have not."

He was asked the question by the committee:

"Do you call everybody who was in the rebel army and afterwards joined the republicans—do you call them scalawags?"

Answer: "Yes, generally."

Question: "Do you call all the people who go down there from the North, carpet-baggers?"

Answer: "They are not all called carpet-baggers."

There is a difference, they are a different class of people. They behave themselves, and do not mix with the negroes, and do not have anything to do with politics."

Question: "What do you think is the effect of the amnesty granted to your people?"

Answer: "I believe the amnesty restored all the rights to the people full and complete. I do not think the Federal Government has any right to disfranchise any man, but the legislatures of the states have. There is a limit beyond which men cannot be driven, and I am ready to die sooner than sacrifice my honor. This thing must have an end, and it is now about time for that end to come."

Question: "Then I suppose that there can be no doubt of a conflict if the militia interferes with the people; is that your view?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, if they attempt to carry out Governor Brownlow's Proclamation by shooting down Ku Klux—for he calls all Southern men Ku Klux—if they go to hunting down and shooting these men, there will be war, and a bloodier one than we have ever witnessed. I have told these radicals here what they might expect in such an event.

"I have no powder to burn killing negroes. I intend to kill the radicals. I have told them this and more. There is not a radical leader in this town, but is a marked man; and if trouble should break out, not one of them would be left alive.

"I have told them that they were trying to create a disturbance and then slip out and leave the conse-

quences to fall upon the negro; but they can't do it. Their houses are picketed, and when the fight comes not one of them would ever get out of this town alive.

"We don't intend they shall ever get out of the country. But I want it distinctly understood that I am opposed to any war, and will only fight in self-defense.

"If the militia should attack us, we will resist to the last; and if necessary, I think I could raise 40,000 men in five days ready for the field."

Question: "Do you think, General, that the Ku Klux Klan has been of any benefit to the State?"

Answer: "No doubt of it."

Question: "What do you think of negro suffrage?"

Answer: "I am opposed to it under any and all circumstances, and in our convention urged our party not to commit themselves at all upon the subject, and here I want you to understand distinctly I am not an enemy to the negro."

Question: "You say that whatever organization of the Ku Klux Klan, or anything else, took place in the region of country with which you are familiar, it was gotten up through fear of depredations by the militia, and was the result of that state of things?"

Answer: "That is my understanding of it."

Question: "And for the protection of themselves where the law was considered powerless?"

Answer: "According to my understanding, the organization was intended entirely as a protection to the people, to enforce the laws, and protect the people against outrages."

Question: "Without any regard to whether they were perpetrated by democrats or republicans?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, I do not think that would make any difference; that is, that is my impression, while I do not know that is so—that was the general understanding in the community."

When Mr. Beck referred to an interview given to a reporter of the *Cincinnati Commercial* and published in that paper in Sept. 1, 1868, and General Forrest's correction by letter of these statements and published in this paper in Sept. 3, 1867, General Forrest said he had been grossly misrepresented by this reporter, when he published that he had said there were 550,000 Ku Klux in the South. He said he objected to this, as he had only said "it was reported, and I believe the report that there are 40,000 Ku Klux in Tennessee, and I believe the organization stronger in other states."



## IX.

### THE UNION LEAGUE OF AMERICA.

The Union League of America was organized in Ohio in 1862, when the Confederate States Army had been victorious on many battle-fields.

Many northern people were banding together to resist the war when their sense of truth and justice had been shocked by the Emancipation Proclamation. Interest in the war had waned all over the North, for the best element there knew that President Lincoln in his inaugural speech March 4, 1861 had said:

“I have no purpose directly or indirectly to interfere with the institution of slavery in the States where it exists; I believe I have no lawful right to do so and I have no inclination to do so.”

When General John C. Fremont issued a proclamation emancipating the slaves of certain persons, President Lincoln countermanded it, and thus led the people North and South to believe he intended to keep his word of non-interference with slavery as made in his inaugural address.

But on Jan. 1, 1863, Mr. Lincoln issued a “Proclamation of Emancipation” declaring all slaves in the seceding States to be free. “There is certainly no authority conferred upon a President by the Con-

stitution of the United States to take such a step under any circumstances."

The Union League was organized in New York in January 1863 immediately after the Emancipation Proclamation, to combat the effect of it as it had greatly depressed the enthusiasm for the war and Mr. Lincoln; this branch of the League was especially pledged to fight in behalf of the people of the North, in States rights.

The Union League which had been founded by a few men in Ohio (Cleveland) in 1862, organized branches in many large cities of the North to keep up the morale of the Union Army, as it was greatly demoralized at that time, and their ardour was cooled by Lincoln's failure to keep his word in regard to slavery.

The Union League sent their agents to the South and distributed leaflets to the negroes, instructing them to outrage the women and children, to force the Confederate soldiers to come home for their protection.

My mother said one of our slaves, Alex, brought this vile paper to her, and as he could not read she read it to him—and he said, "I would die before I would harm you or the children, or allow any other man, white or black, to hurt you."

He asked for my father's shot gun, and bringing an axe sat down on the steps, and guarded the house day and night until my father returned home, as he was at that time absent.

There was not an instance during slavery or dur-

ing the Civil War, when a negro man assaulted a white woman, and all over the South they protected the homes and children—this fact was the fundamental reason that led the men of the South to be as patient as they were with the negroes when many of them made drunk by mean white men during the period of Reconstruction would do wrong; but they were the younger negroes and the free negroes from the North, who, after being freed, as in Rhode Island, had been exiled and were wanderers, were brought South by the Union League to do the crimes that the former faithful slaves would not do.

The Southern women appreciate this protection given us by these negro men, and too little has been known of it in the North.

The Union League continued its vicious work during the reconstruction period, both North and South, and is responsible more than any other agency for the bitterness engendered between these sections.

This League was the first to suggest negro suffrage—and after the war the League increased enormously, and in most cases, with the lowest order of men on earth, who would send reports to the North of conditions which did not exist in the South.

The members of this League were the men who were the spurious imitators of the uniforms and regalia of the Ku Klux Klan, who would kill, whip and otherwise punish negroes who refused to do their vile bidding, and report them as outrages done by the real Ku Klux Klan.

In the border States, especially Kentucky, this League perpetrated many outrages in 1870, which caused the real Ku Klux Klan to become more active there. One of the most notoriously dishonest, untruthful of the Freedman's Bureau Agents, and tool of the Union League was J. W. Alvord, General Superintendent of Education of the Freedmen's Bureau, and whose experience with the real Ku Klux Klan is given in his own words in a letter from him to Gen. O. O. Howard:

Berea, Kentucky, Jan. 29, 1870.

Dear General:

I regret to report threats and a species of guerilla warfare still existing. At ten o'clock last night we were startled amid the darkness with the loud cry ringing through the forest, "Hurrah for Jeff Davis. Jeff Davis is a *white man*." But the Ku Klux Klan knew that every student (male, negro) here carried a revolver, in line on the first alarm, and they did not leave the beaten path. The past twenty-four hours have been in the midst of the Ku Klux Klan. At this moment a fierce yell directly in my ear, wheeled me half way around with its stunning force. I had heard the same (multitudinous) on rebel battle-fields. I still hear of the Ku Klux outrages. We still are obliged to hold them in mystery as to our mission. We intimated that the General Government would be obliged to suppress these atrocities.

Yours very respectfully,

J. W. ALVORD,  
Gen. Supt. of Education.



Richmond, Ky., Jan. 29, 1870.

Dear General:

I wrote on leaving Louisville; then on a fast train, soon found myself in what is called the "Blue Grass Region of Kentucky," no part of the country—perhaps of the world,—excels in fertility this remarkable belt. Herds of cattle and horses, even at this cold season are grazing the meadows and rich pasture slopes—but in general there is to a Northern eye, an air of unthrift and discomfort, a painful discrepancy between means and ends, as though some strange blight had passed over the land and the people, leaving everywhere its poison.

Stopping for the night in this county seat (Madison Co.) we are at a diminutive hotel, *not temperance*, kept by an ex-Rebel, Headquarters of the Ku Klux or "marauders" are not far from here—no one is supposed to know where (I heard that some negroes were killed near here).

Very respectfully yours,

J. W. ALVORD,

General O. O. Howard.

Gen. Supt. of Ed. F. B.

Nashville, Tenn.,

Jan. 26, 1870.

Dear General:

This city is the center of culture and political influence in Tennessee, and is now quite astir with the State Convention and the Legislature. Both bodies indicate within the last few days some advance in the right direction, as seen in the discussion of further educational provisions, and enactment against that

nuisance, now beginning to be universally felt, the Ku Klux, or as they are here called "masked marauders"—

Even in the schools of the charitable societies it is the custom to have the pupils pay *fifty cents per month*. There is no complaint of this, such is the unabated desire for learning.

Yours very respectfully,

J. W. ALVORD,

General O. O. Howard.      Gen. Supt. of Ed. F. B.

"Lo! the poor nigger!" Believing that he was being provided schools by Northern charity, was compelled to slave and pay money to those thieving agents, while the Bureau creating these schools was supported by the Government.

Condition of the white children of the South in regard to schools is shown by the following letter from J. W. Alvord to Gen. O. O. Howard.

Columbia, S. C.,

Jan. 7, 1870.

Dear General:

I have been much interested in witnessing the social elevation of the Freedmen at this place. The Governor, R. K. Scott, in his receptions, makes no distinctions among the members of the legislature (125 of whom are colored), all are taken equally by the hand with the graceful urbanity for which his honor is distinguished. All alike, on such occasions

crowd around his luxurious refreshment tables, where as his accomplished lady told me there were no invidious distinctions made.

You will remember at the dinner given on your account, and at which I had the honor of being a guest, his Secretary of State, Hon. F. L. Cardoza and his lady (both colored) received equal attention with other officials and ladies and gentlemen of the highest standing. I could but feel as I looked on that agreeable circle *that equality of character and culture were the conditions of equality in social life.* The Governor has followed the same rule on other occasions, and in conversation with me said he could allow himself to adopt none other. His opinion is that in our higher institutions of learning, cultured youth of both colors will come, at length, to associate on equal terms, and that scholarship and general refinement, on each side will gradually settle the question of mixed schools.

At Orangeburg I found the Claflin University in the large and beautiful building (late the Orangeburg Female Academy) which was repaired by Mr. Deane of the Bureau at an expense of \$2,500 with about one hundred students under the efficient care of Dr. Webster——It will probably ask for further assistance from the Bureau.

I have the honor to be yours, etc.,

Respectfully, J. W. ALVORD,  
Supt. of Ed. R. F. and A. L.

Gen. O. O. Howard.

This was just one instance of thousands where the school property was stolen by the Freedman's Bureau, and negroes put in them, thereby robbing the Southern white children of their educational rights.

Mr. Alvord reckoned without his host in thinking that there ever would be mixed schools (negroes and whites) in the South—and the white children do all honor to the Ku Klux Klan for preventing even at the point of bayonets such a condition for them.

These negro schools were taught by Northern white teachers.

For the white children there were no schools. The University of Alabama made an effort to open in 1865, but only one student appeared, as a carpet-bagger named Lakin had taken it—the worst type of man, and the one who was abused by Colonel Nicholas Davis, who for which was falsely called in Congressional hearings a “scalawag.” He was a finished scholar, yet this report of the committee is made in the most incorrect language, bearing falsehood on the face of it.

During reconstruction, many school buildings were ordered burned by the Union League, because the white children did not go to them with the negroes. A notable instance occurred in Tuscumbia, Alabama, near Muscle Shoals, when the negroes were told by these League agents to burn the town. They refused to do so, saying there were good people there, and then the agent set fire to the Tuscumbia school for Girls.

The white children were taught at home by their



parents, and a few private schools opened in the homes of Southern women. I attended my first school in the home of Miss Sally Malone, at Athens, Alabama, and my father, with the other fathers, always went with us to protect the lady as far as possible, as there were threats that negroes would be sent there by the Federal soldiers.

At this time, from 1870 to 1877, the Ku Klux Klan, either in their regalia or without it, were ever near the women and children protecting them, while working at anything they could do to provide for them.

Major Robert Donnell was our neighbor, and when my father was away from home, he would take my sisters and me to school. He told me years afterwards that he was one of the children's Ku Klux guards, and the following is a sketch of his war record. Private Company E, 50th Alabama Regiment. Major 22nd Alabama Infantry, and was Adjutant, in General D. H. Hill's Division. Paroled May 1865. He was a cultured gentleman of the old school of Southern chivalry. He was one of the founders of the Athens, Alabama, Ku Klux Klan and was the Grand Scribe of the "Invisible Empire."

## X.

### CONDITIONS FROM 1870-1877.

General Nathan B. Forrest was on his plantation near Memphis, Tennessee, but at all times he was available to the Ku Klux Klan for his advice and guidance. When the newspaper reports of the crimes committed by the Clark band of Tories reached him, and the Northern press attributed it to the Ku Klux Klan, he immediately went to Florence, having notified the leaders to meet him there to consider what steps should be taken to apprehend and punish desperadoes and wipe out the odium which had been attributed to the Ku Klux Klan by the Northern public.

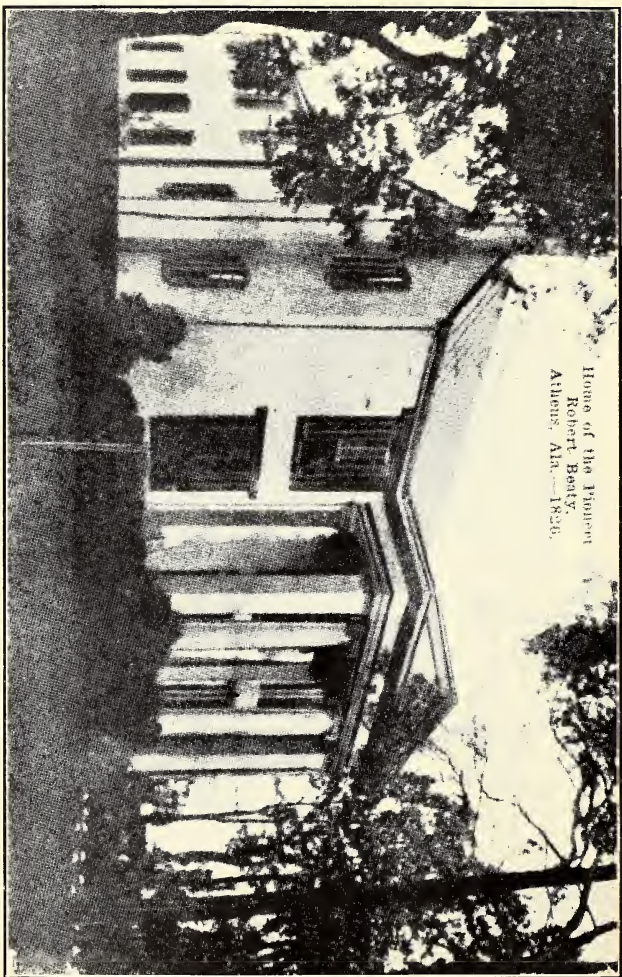
General John B. Gordon of Georgia was visiting his brother, Major E. C. Gordon, of Athens, Alabama, at this time and represented the Georgia Ku Klux Klan at this meeting, which was presided over by General Nathan B. Forrest and from which great results were anticipated.

This meeting was held on the plantation of General George S. Houston, which is located at Muscle Shoals on the Tennessee River.

(A description of this meeting was given me by Major James R. Crowe and Captain John C. Lester, who represented the Pulaski Klan, and by Colonel



Home of the Plumber  
Robert Beatty  
Athens, Ala.—1896.



Home of Robert Beatty Mason, Confederate States Army, and one of the  
founders of the Alabama Ku Klux Klan.



Lawrence Ripley Davis, Captain William Richardson, Captain John M. Townsend, Colonel T. J. Cox, Mr. R. B. Mason, and Major Robert Donnell.)

During this meeting General George S. Houston said that Alabama must be rescued from radical rule, and his life-time friend, Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis, replied to him, that he was the only man in Alabama who could defeat any Radical candidate, and that if he would consent to be a candidate, he would "stump the state" in his behalf.

In 1874, when General Houston made the race for governor against David P. Lewis, a Radical, he held Mr. Davis to his promise, and they canvassed every county in the State together. Economy was a leading trait of General George S. Houston, both with his private funds and public trusts; so he had a wagon made of hickory wood, with spring seats and had the wheels built very high so he could ford the streams. He employed a young man, Mr. Maclin Hill, to drive for him, on this immortal canvass, which won for him the election of governor in 1874 and his re-election in 1876, thus wresting the State from the rule of the Radicals and negroes.

By his wise business policy, Alabama was enabled to pay her honorable debts, though at the time of his election the State had neither funds nor credit, even to hold the Constitutional Convention in 1875. Governor Houston pledged his private purse that the same would be paid if the people could not raise the money. He was never called upon to do this,

as, by some miracle, they managed to raise the necessary funds.

Governor George S. Houston served in the United States Congress from 1841 to January 1861. When secession seemed almost a certainty, he became a member of the famous Committee of Thirty-three to devise means to save the Union, but when Alabama seceded he wrote and presented to the Speaker the formal withdrawal of the Alabama delegation from the Federal Congress.

He was earnestly opposed to secession as was Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis, who was a member of the Alabama Legislature when Alabama seceded. Both of them, while they were bitterly opposed to secession gracefully yielded to the will of the majority, and Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis, at the request of the governor of Alabama, made speeches throughout the Tennessee valley, persuading the people of North Alabama to acquiesce in the result of the secession convention, and did great work in overcoming the bitter opposition to secession in that section of the State.

General George S. Houston did all in his power to aid the Confederacy. Two of his sons were in the Confederate Army. He would not take the oath of allegiance to the Federal Government after the War.

Colonel Lawrence Ripley Davis was secretary to George S. Houston during his four years as governor, and together they formulated many of the wise measures which enabled Alabama to recover from Reconstruction.

Governor Houston was elected to the United States Senate, but served only a short time when he died in Athens, Dec. 31, 1879, honored and beloved by all Alabamians.

The Ku Klux Klan, who were directly responsible for the redemption of Alabama from misrule, rejoiced in the re-election of Governor Houston in 1876, and many thousands of them paraded in Athens, Alabama, Governor Houston's home, to pay him tribute. This was the last parade of the Ku Klux Klan at that place.

The torchlights in this parade were decorated with banners on which pictures of men who had believed in negro rule were painted, half black and half white. This unique idea was conceived and the pictures painted by a young boy, Arthur Pepin, who was greatly applauded by the older men, for the pictures were so life-like the faces could be recognized by the immense number of people in the parade. The men thus caricatured by the boy (who was true blue) were so frightened that they left the town.

About sixty worthy negro men, who had been faithful to the white people during the war and this dreadful time of reconstruction, and who voted for Governor Houston, were in this parade, having been provided with horses by the Ku Klux Klan.

Otho Fraser, a negro man who is still living at Athens, Alabama, at the age of 96, described this parade to me in detail, and is proud to have been numbered among the negroes who were shown by this act that the white people appreciated their fidelity;

he has always been a credit to his race, and said to me that "If all the people in the world were at work each day, making shoes, as I do—or something else—*there would be no problems to settle for white or black.*"

He is shown great respect by the white people of Athens, and he has reared a family of efficient men and women. At his advanced age he is physically and mentally very alert and he says he knows many of the Ku Klux Klan secrets which he will never divulge.

The government at Washington, realizing that the Democratic party was gaining in strength in the South, began to use every means in their power to elect Republicans, and to further incense the Southern people.

In South Carolina, among the first acts of Governor Scott's radical administration, was the organization of 8,000 negro militia, and he went in person to General Grant, and induced him, without any authority of law to issue arms under the Congressional appropriation for twenty years in advance.

These arms were the newly perfected Springfield rifles, and this negro militia was furnished with United States Army uniforms and equipment. On the 4th of July, 1876, these companies were drilling under a negro named Doc. Adams.

Meeting a party of young white men on the highway he gave the order to charge bayonets to compel the advancing men to flee. But they were not of that kind.



They reached for their pistols and shouted: "We will shoot the first man who sticks a bayonet in a horse!" The negroes could have butchered the white men with great ease, but the Captain shouted "Halt" to his men, and opened his ranks so that the white men could pass.

After this it was the settled purpose of the leading white men in South Carolina to seize the first opportunity to teach the negroes a lesson.

It was believed by these men now, that all other efforts having failed at Washington, by the appeals of the leaders of the South, "that nothing but bloodshed, and a great deal of it," could answer the purpose of relieving that State from negro and carpet-bag rule.

Quickly followed the riots known as the "Ned Tennant Riot" and the "Hamburgh Riot," and other clashes between the negroes and white men.

The "Hamburgh Riot" caused such a furore throughout the North, and the Republican press was waving the "bloody shirt" with such frantic energy, that the South Carolina men decided that they would wave the bloody shirt in reality, in defiance.

So a parade was arranged, and shirts, stained with red were made by the women. This parade was known as the "Red Shirt Parade."

Many men who participated in it were Ku Klux Klansmen who felt that they could co-operate with them for they knew full well the powers of an odd and spectacular uniform in putting fear into the hearts of

the rebellious and fractious negroes who were authorized by the government to maintain military authority.

The "Red Shirt Organization" served to draw the bond of race closer together, and to emphasize the one thought "white supremacy," which pulsed in every white bosom. It was "all for one and one for all."

Their activities were coincident with those of the Ku Klux Klan until South Carolina was redeemed in 1877, and for many years the "Red Shirts" held their annual reunion, and I quote this from a speech made by Senator Benjamin R. Tillman at the "Red Shirt Reunion at Anderson, S. C., Aug. 25, 1909."

After appearing before the Congressional subcommittee at Huntsville as a witness, General Forrest called the Ku Klux Klan together there and stated to them that he had been convinced that something must be done, and at once, to establish home rule in the South, and to go to the rescue of South Carolina. He directed the Ku Klux Klans to meet him at "Capshaw's Mountain," Madison County, Alabama. At this meeting were many of the leading Confederate Generals, among them General John B. Gordon.

General Forrest instructed the Ku Klux Klan to make a regalia suitable for military purposes, of white cloth, bordered with red. I have a clear recollection of the women of the neighborhood meeting at my mother's home and making many of these garments,

and I learned to sew, while assisting them to stitch on red bias folds.

It was at this time that I received my impression of General Forrest. He came from this meeting on Capshaw's Mountain to be the guest of my parents, Colonel and Mrs. Lawrence Ripley Davis, at "Woodlawn," Madison County, Alabama.

This visit was indelibly impressed on my mind by the fact that my mother made a special effort in those hard times to prepare a typical Southern dinner for the distinguished guest. I remember that all the neighbors, far and near, brought from their pantries all the delicacies which at that time her home was deprived of; for General Forrest was the hero of all hearts throughout that section, as he had saved it on several occasions during the Civil War.

The picture that he made on my childish mind was that he towered in height and soldierly bearing above other tall men present, as his form was reflected in mirrors above the mantle, standing with his back to the firelight which flickered brightly against crimson carpets and curtains. That so great a man as General Forrest should, as he did, play a game of chess with me on the floor, with the red and white chess men, used then, is indeed an incident to be remembered with pride.

During this evening one of the chief topics was the cotton tax that had been illegally imposed after the war, and the devising of some means for General Gordon to present the subject at Washington for the return of the millions of dollars collected by the

government. This tax was the means of ruining many of the Southern planters and it was at this time that I heard my father say to General Forrest that on account of this tax, he would be compelled to at last give up his beautiful home and go to Athens to try and make a livelihood for his family.

General Forrest seemed much concerned and urged General Gordon to hurry to Washington on the mission about the cotton, but nothing was ever accomplished.

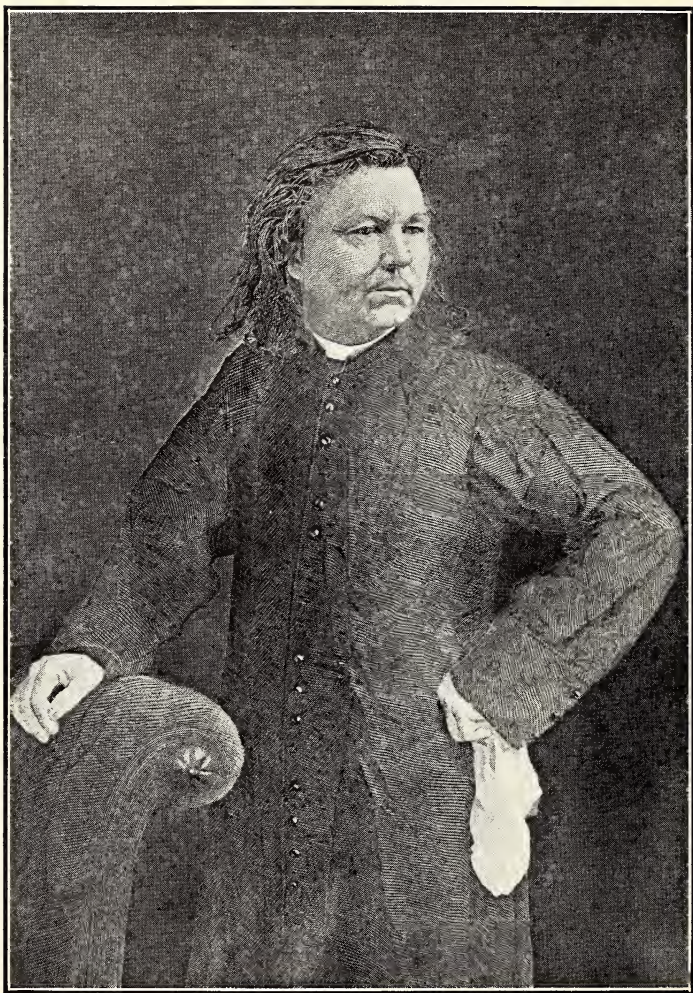
Soon after this, my father had to move to Athens, and I had to bid farewell to this home that I loved and to the magnificent forest oaks, wide-spreading chestnut trees, and tall aspens whose rustling leaves had seemed to me to be the whisperings of angels. This was my first great grief, when I told my trees good-bye, and played for the last time on the mossy carpet beneath them, *I left them with a promise to return when the cotton tax was paid.* (It has been fifty years, and the government has never settled the cotton claims.)

My father was only one instance of many planters who remained on their lands in order to give work to their former slaves who had been faithful and were still willing to work. This illegal tax on the cotton made it impossible for the white men to get a financial footing to enable them to remain on their plantations; and so the better class of negroes were set adrift without any assistance or means of support.

Some of them however, were able by their industry







*Abraham I. Ryan*

Chaplain Confederate States Army; Poet Laureate of the South; Grand Chaplain of the "Invisible Empire," Ku Klux Klan.

"He soothed the suffering soul of the stricken South by writing

'The Conquered Banner' a few days after General Robert E. Lee surrendered the Confederate States Army."

(Contributed by Dr. and Mrs. Arthur Pepin,  
Washington, D. C.)



GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE

Confederate States Army  
Incarnated Spirit of the Ku Klux Klan and the "Invisible Empire"

(First time this photograph has been published,  
by courtesy of L. C. Handy, Washington, D. C.)







to buy little homes and pay for them as the years went by. I even know of instances where, through their being able to earn wages they would take it to their former owners, telling them to use some of it to keep them from starving, and in after years, when the white people had recovered, they took great pleasure in showing their appreciation in every way, for their faithfulness.

After General Forrest held the Ku Klux Klan meeting on Capshaw's Mountain he returned to his plantation near Memphis and soon afterwards, General Wade Hampton of South Carolina went to his Yazoo Delta Plantation to make an effort to rehabilitate it. At this time he called on General Forrest and while they were discussing the unbearable conditions in South Carolina, General Forrest said to him that it was his duty to return to South Carolina and make the race for Governor; and if elected he would see that he was seated, if it took the efforts of the Ku Klux Klan.

The Nashville convention decided to extend the Ku Klux Klan to the District of Columbia and to the seceded states. This constituted the **INVISIBLE EMPIRE** over which General Forrest, the Grand Wizard, had complete control; and he commanded from the headquarters of the original Ku Klux Klan at Pulaski, Tenn., which place remained the seat of authority until the close of the Ku Klux Klan's existence in 1877. From there he sent klansmen to each state, with appointments as Grand Dragons of

the Realms of these states and the District of Columbia, who were to report to him the progress of the order and to appoint all other officers created at the convention.

The expansion of the Ku Klux Klan was so rapid and created so much comment throughout the country as to necessitate many meetings at the headquarters with Forrest and the Grand Dragons of the Realms.

The object of these meetings was to devise means to hold the order itself in check, and also to find ways of detecting and apprehending the men sent South by the spurious Ku Klux Klan, for the purpose of fomenting ill will between the negroes and white people of the South.

It was proven at all times that the crimes committed were instigated by the spurious Ku Klux Klan sent there by the politicians at Washington to assist the carpet-baggers and the Military authorities who were in control of the South at this time in making it appear that the people of the South were still disloyal.

Many instances occurred where these impostors were arrested and tried, but would be set free by the authorities who were in league with the spurious Ku Klux Klan.

The *Washington Post* of August 13, 1905, states that when Brownlow was endeavoring to crush out the Ku Klux Klan in Tennessee, one of his detectives gained admission to the order. His purposes became known and the Nashville Den which he had joined

under false pretenses put him in a barrel and rolled it into the Cumberland river and he was drowned. The States of the South given here are examples of all reconstruction—in the other States of the “Invisible Empire.”

## XI.

### THE INVISIBLE EMPIRE.

#### RECONSTRUCTION IN THE DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA.

To cover the history of reconstruction in the seceded states would require many volumes. I will only include the salient points for the District of Columbia and the states comprising the Confederate States of America which later became the "Invisible Empire."

The contest for negro suffrage for the District of Columbia was being waged in 1866 before the people of the North and their Congress, as the Southern states were denied representation in Congress at that time.

The negro race had been the only one in the world's history to hold an entire continent against the invasion of civilization and to maintain barbarism for centuries. The Moors and Egyptians had tried to conquer Africa from the North. The Asiatics had tried to enter it from the East, and other European Nations had assailed it with their power but had failed to penetrate the "dark continent."

This was the fierce battle the negroes had fought in Africa to keep out civilization, but were finally captured and sold into slavery into this country.



They then began to be developed and converted to civilization and christianity.

In the Northern part of the United States the climate was so severe, coming as they did from tropical regions, their labor was not very profitable, the winters being so long and cold and they suffered intensely with the cold and many of them died and their children were becoming less enabled to stand the severe climate.

In the southern part of the United States the climate agreed with the negroes, and cotton raising and other outdoor work was better suited to his capacity than the work in the North where he was expected to do skilled labor for which his mind had not become fitted. Finding the ownership of them unprofitable, the northern people sold their slaves to the slave owners of the southern states.

Previous to the Civil War a free state for liberated slaves had been founded by philanthropists in Liberia, and many negroes who had been given their freedom by their masters, both north and south, had been taken there, but it proved a failure. Hayti and San Domingo Black Republics were colossal failures.

With these warnings before Congress the idea of universal suffrage for negroes was decided on and a bill for "the extension of suffrage to the colored race in the District of Columbia, both as a right and an example" was before the Senate. It was understood that the southern states which had seceded in 1861 were to be treated the same as the District of Columbia.

The only question raised in the debates on this bill was whether the votes should be confined to the negroes who could read and write, and Mr. Charles Sumner said in regard to this measure: "Now to my mind nothing is clearer than the absolute necessity of suffrage for all colored persons in the disorganized States."

"It will not be enough if you give it to those who read and write. You will not in this way acquire the voting force which you need there for the protection of the Unionists, whether white or black. *You will not secure the new allies who are essential to the national cause.*" The bill granting suffrage to the colored race in the District of Columbia was passed on January 7, 1867, and President Johnson returned it making objections, saying: "this is not the place for such an experiment."

Senator John Sherman said, when the veto of the President was being debated: "The President says this is not the place for this experiment. I say it is the place of all others because if the negroes abuse the political power we give them we can withdraw the privilege at any moment."

The Constitution of the United States gives Congress complete control of the District of Columbia. When another law, passed while Grant was President, gave the District of Columbia the right to elect its own Legislature and Governor, then the negroes showed their want of capacity as a "right and an example" for the sun of "pitiless publicity" shone on the Capital, and the whole country realized that

they did not know how to use their vote, and so many abuses of the power of negro suffrage were apparent that this power was withdrawn in 1874 after only a few years of "experiment"; and in so doing deprived the white men of the District of Columbia of the franchise which they had long held, but which has not been restored to them after a half century.

The law giving the negroes the vote was not so easily withdrawn in the Southern states, and the evils attendant upon it there cannot be described, but some of them are set forth as extenuating circumstances which justify the existence of the Ku Klux Klan in the South from 1865 to 1877. One of the most unconstitutional acts of the United States Government during the Civil War was closing Trinity Episcopal Church in Washington City, because the rector prayed for the Confederate States of America.

Congress had no right under the Constitution of the United States to interfere with suffrage in the states and the Ku Klux Klan determined to convince them of their error at Washington.

A spurious Ku Klux Klan was organized in the District of Columbia in 1866 and its operations and purposes were to discredit the Ku Klux Klan of the South, but their schemes were checkmated by the real Ku Klux Klan.

The authentic Ku Klux Klan had a strong Realm in the District of Columbia, whose duty it was to follow the movements of these impostors who were planning through such men as Thaddeus Stevens and

Benjamin Butler and other radicals to subjugate the Southern states and make of them a "black republic."

The Ku Klux Klan of the Realm of the District of Columbia was alternately commanded by Capt. John C. Lester, Major James R. Crowe, and Capt. John B. Kennedy of the original Ku Klux Klan of Pulaski, Tennessee, and Colonel Sumner A. Cunningham, Grand Monk of the "Invisible Empire," whose duty it was with their aid to do secret service. Colonel Cunningham gave me this fact for this history.





GENERAL ALBERT PIKE

Confederate States Army  
Chief Justice of the "Invisible Empire" (Ku Klux Klan)  
Father of Scottish Rite Masonry

(Reproduction of oil painting presented by  
Mr. Yvon Pike, Leesburg, Va., son of  
General Pike, for this History.)



## XII.

### VIRGINIA.

Virginia suffered more than any state during the Civil War because she fed both armies while on her soil. It was the chief battle ground of the conflict and the capital of the Confederate States of America being at Richmond made it necessary to keep so many of the Confederate soldiers within her borders for her support which alone would have taxed her resources without the plundering of her state by the Federal army.

From 1861 to 1865 the Government of Virginia at Richmond and the Confederate Government received the most loyal support of all of her citizens and when it became plain that the Southern Confederacy was a "Lost Cause" the state government would have adopted a liberal policy at Washington and her people being united could have led by restoring Virginia to her place in the Union.

But she was not to be so fortunate for President Lincoln changed his policy towards this state when he revoked his order for the meeting of the General Assembly and she then suffered more by the reconstruction which followed this act than any other State for her domain was rent asunder and she lost one-third of her territory as the State of West Vir-

ginia was made from it. There were three governments in Virginia; Richmond, Wheeling and Alexandria.

Congress admitted West Virginia with 48 counties and a subsequent act granted the annexation of two others. The extent of the spoliation of Virginia, which was contemplated by the Wheeling Government in West Virginia while still claiming to represent the Old Commonwealth was that fifty counties were actually transferred and appropriated by West Virginia, but the Wheeling Legislature passed "An act providing for taking the sense of the voters of Accomack and Northampton whether or not they will be annexed to Maryland," and another act giving consent to the admission of certain counties into the new state of West Virginia on certain conditions.

There had been a convention at Wheeling in June, 1861, and Francis H. Pierpoint had been elected "Governor of Virginia." Although the entire territory represented in and supporting him had become another state and elected another governor, yet he posed as the governor of all Virginia not transferred to West Virginia.

The Bill for the admission of West Virginia passed the Senate of the United States in July, 1862, but there being some delay in the House of Representatives the Wheeling Legislature, still as the Legislature of Virginia, not only memorialized the House to pass the bill dismembering the Commonwealth and alienating part of her territory, but also requested the resignation of Hon. John S. Carlisle



who as Senator from Virginia had resisted the dismemberment of his native state.

On the 31st of December, 1862, the President signed a bill previously passed by both Houses that at the expiration of 60 days West Virginia would be one of the sovereign and co-equal states of the Union, and on the 20th of June, 1863, the day her statehood and position in the Union became complete the government of West Virginia was formally inaugurated.

"One of the most remarkable features of this story is the complacency with which conventions, legislatures and governors, purporting to represent the Commonwealth of Virginia proposed and consented to repeated partitions and transfers of her territory—one sovereignty acting for every party and interest concerned in the transaction—in turn promoter of the scheme, donor of the territory and recipient of the same."

In December, 1865, the duly elected representatives of Virginia appeared in the Capitol at Washington and deposited their credentials with the Clerk. They took their seats upon the floor but upon the call of the House the Clerk had not entered the name of a single representative of a Southern state upon the rolls, and the hopes that Lincoln had raised in the hearts of the people of Virginia were suddenly dashed.

There was no time for defense. The outrage was consummated as soon as suggested, and upon what ground can it be defended? "Would the representa-

tives from the Southern States have been barred out of Congress in 1865 if either with or without negro suffrage these states had been so organized as to give fair assurance of substantial republican majorities?"

There was no resistance in Virginia at the time to national authority; no excitement, no disorder, no insecurity of life or property which justified the suppression of the fresh life of the state and the new hopes of her people. This ejection of the representative from Virginia without assigning any reason or being given a chance to be heard did more to engender in Virginia a resentment against the general government than all of the military operations on her soil during the war.

The people felt that they had made every concession and conciliation consistent with their honesty when they sustained the Pierpoint government thus adding to it the seal of popular favor which it lacked.

They felt that the government of the state organized under it ought to stand in an exceptionally strong position with the government of the United States as having furnished not only the first rallying point for Union sentiment in the South, but the first model for the readmission of all the southern states, and they felt this treatment to be a violation of good faith, not only of logical and legal consistency but of good faith itself.

This situation occurring as it did almost coincident with the founding of the Ku Klux Klan in Tennessee caused her people to invite the Ku Klux Klan from Tennessee to form klans in Virginia in February,

1866, and it spread very rapidly and was the chief means of allaying the spirit of resistance which had risen in the hearts of the Virginia people, and a desire on their part to begin the war again.

It was said that the legislation of the Southern states with reference to the Freedmen was justification for these severe terms of reconstruction imposed upon them. This has also been made a ground to justify the refusal of the House of Representatives to admit the delegation elected from the Southern states to the Thirty-ninth Congress, but this excuse utterly failed in regard to Virginia, for her representatives were refused admission on December 4, 1865, while the "Vagrant Act," the only statute we have ever known specified as unfair to Freedmen, was passed January 15, 1866.

General Terry published an order far and wide in which he said the Virginia Act declared all persons vagrant who broke a contract with an employer and in this case authorized the employer to work the runaway an additional month with ball and chain, if necessary. Is it any wonder that by such false statements as given in Terry's order the Northern heart was fired against the South, but no such statute was ever passed in Virginia.

General Robert E. Lee testified before the Reconstruction Committee at Washington on February 17, 1866, that he believed the people of the South would uphold the government of the United States for the future. "I believe that they entirely acquiesce in the government of the United States and that they

are for coöperating with President Johnson in his policy in regard to the restoration of the whole country; they have confidence in the wisdom of his policy and look forward to it as a hope of restoration."

Mr. Blow of the Committee said to General Lee: "Suppose that this policy of President Johnson should be all that you anticipate and that you should realize all that you expect in the improvement of your material interests, do you think that the result would be gradual restoration of the old feeling?"

General Lee said: "That would be the natural result and I see no other way in which that result can be brought about and it would be the surest and speediest."

The greatness of the soul of General Lee was shown by his earnest urging of the Southern people to accept the result of the war and to stay in the South and rebuild it. He did all in his power to calm them in every way and the succeeding years have proven how much he had won the heart of the South and the whole country as well for his wisdom in peace as they had loved him for his bravery in war.

General Lee had the faith of a crusader. He prayed for his men and also for his enemies in arms. He was always the gentle Christian, and is it any wonder that men would follow him into the jaws of death?

Robert Edward Lee was descended from Lionel Lee who crossed the English Channel with William the Conqueror, and another ancestor fought with



Richard the Lion-hearted at Acre in the Third Crusade. His first American ancestor was a great Virginian and had much influence in the Virginia colony; his grandson, Henry Lee, was the grandfather of "Lighthorse Harry" Lee who was a soldier of the American Revolution and the father of Robert E. Lee.

General Lee was with General Scott in Mexico in the Mexican War and he said of him: "My success was largely due to the skill, valor and undaunted courage of Capt. Robert E. Lee, and Lee is the greatest military genius in America and the best soldier that I ever saw in the field. He will some day show himself the foremost captain of his time." How true this prophecy. Is it any wonder that Mr. Lincoln sent Mr. Francis P. Blair to General Lee, who was stopping with him in his home on Pennsylvania Avenue, Washington, D. C., just across the street from the White House and offered him command of the Union forces in the Civil War? Robert E. Lee declined and cast his lot with Virginia, sending the message to President Lincoln: "I am a citizen of Virginia, and all her laws and acts are binding on me."

These were General Lee's first words expressing his feelings at the beginning of the war, and his last words to his officers when he felt he was forced to surrender were: "I could wish I had fallen in the last battle," and turning to General John B. Gordon, "but it is our duty to live, for what will become of the women and children of the South if we are not here to protect and support them."

General Gordon told me that when the Anti-Ku Klux law was passed in Tennessee that he and General Forrest went to Virginia and asked General Lee if they should disband and he said: "The women and children must be protected," and turning with eyes full of tears towards them urged them that they strengthen the Ku Klux Klan and drive the desperadoes who were committing crimes in their name from southern soil.

He assured them that he did not believe that his brave soldiers would stoop to such deeds as they were accused of as Ku Klux. He told them he had faith in their power to save the South to the Union, but he did not live to see all of this accomplished, but his beloved Virginia was readmitted before he died.

General Gordon told me that General Forrest hoped General Lee would join the Ku Klux Klan, but he said: "I am still an unpardoned prisoner," and turning away he knelt and prayed for the redemption of the South.

General Lee said to them that he had been suffering with rheumatism of the heart since 1863 and that he would not last very long, but he was not stricken until September 28, 1870. While at his breakfast table as he stood and said grace he collapsed and was carried to his bed from which he never rallied, dying at 9 o'clock October 12, 1870, fighting to the last, in his dying hour for his beloved South, his last words being: "Tell Hill he *must* come up." This order in his dying words was the same he sent to General A. P. Hill at one of the battles.

"No section of the country suffered in the Civil War as did the Valley of the Shenandoah except from Alexandria to the Rapidan," was said by Charles Douglas Gray of Augusta County, Virginia, to the Reconstruction Committee at Washington in 1866.

"From Harper's Ferry to New Market, 80 miles, it was a complete desert—no fences; barns, and dwellings burned—chimneys standing without houses and houses without chimneys; bridges all gone and roads destroyed; all fruit trees and timber ruined and only the blue sky and the impoverished ground was left to show where once had been the finest civilization the world had ever known."

When Mr. Gray was asked by a member of the Committee what they would do when they planted wheat to keep the stock out of the fields he replied that General Sheridan had not left any stock to get in the fields nor any implements with which to plant the wheat. Mr. Gray said that the people of his county were for the Union until State pride made them give it up; and that it was a Scotch-Irish population and when their blood was heated there was not a more tenacious people in the world.

They were the last to go into the war and they were the last to give it up. He was asked if he thought the secessionists would take up arms for the United States if it should have a contest with England or France. He replied: "The Secessionists hate England for not recognizing the Confederacy; and the Southern people were more dissatisfied

with England's course towards them than the United States were with her course toward them,—they hate England for her duplicity in not helping them, and in a war with England they would stand by the United States Government.”

When Mr. Gray was asked about the negro, he said: “The negroes are in a very unsettled, restless condition and should be put to work. They have no idea of the expense of living.”

When asked if the negro was susceptible to religion, he said: “He prefers the emotional kind, the Methodist and Baptist,” and that he was superstitious, but not more so than some white people he had known everywhere.

In regard to Lincoln's policy of reconstruction, *Harper's Weekly* Nov. 10, 1866, said: “It is worthwhile to understand what President Lincoln's policy would have been, for whatever his action during the war, he died before he could develop a policy of restoration.”

The Honorable Chas. A. Dana, Asst. Sec'y of War during the latter part of Lincoln's administration, made a most important statement in a speech at the time of President Lincoln's death, showing precisely what Mr. Lincoln's opinion was: “I can affirm that previous to the assassination of Mr. Lincoln the reconstruction of Virginia was considered by the Cabinet, and a printed document was prepared setting forth the plan of reconstruction to be adopted in regard to that state.

“That printed document never became official, but



it met the hearty approval of Mr. Lincoln. That plan of reconstruction provided for the calling of a Convention to amend the Constitution of the State of Virginia, and stated most positively that all loyal citizens whether white or black, should be allowed to vote, and it further stipulated that rebels should be denied the right of suffrage." That was Mr. Lincoln's idea of reconstruction.

In 1866 Thomas M. Cook testified before the Reconstruction Committee at Washington and gave an account of the order issued by President Lincoln to General Weitzel to call the Legislature of Virginia together to reconsider her readmission into the Union when requested to do so by Judge John A. Campbell of Virginia. President Lincoln said to Judge Campbell: "I consider it extremely important that the body which attempted to take the State out of the Union should repair the damage done."

The next day President Lincoln wrote General Weitzel a note while he was still in Virginia authorizing him to call the Legislature of Virginia together and General Weitzel issued the call and the people of Virginia were rejoiced believing they would soon be at home in the Union. But they were to meet with bitter disappointment for Mr. Lincoln returned to Washington and immediately wired General Weitzel to cancel the order for the assembling of the Legislature and ordering General Weitzel to collect all the papers he had given Judge Campbell outlining the plan for taking Virginia back into the Union and suppress them.

This act has been considered by Southern men as a most powerful argument that President Lincoln had changed his mind in regard to any just plan of readmitting the Southern states, and led to the horrors of subsequent reconstruction.

Mr. Cook who was the correspondent for the *New York Herald* said he saw the plan offered by President Lincoln to Judge Campbell and that it was very Lincolnish and was as follows: "Three things are essential to peace: First, complete disbandment of all forces in hostility to the United States; Second, a full recognition of the authority of the government of the United States throughout all the territory in which that authority had been resisted; and, Third, no recession by the Executive from his position on the question of Emancipation as proclaimed in his message to Congress and in other documents."

Had this plan been carried out by President Lincoln the South would not have been a victim of his want of decision, by the horrors of reconstruction.

General U. S. Grant laid the blame for President Lincoln's recalling the order to General Weitzel at the door of Edwin M. Stanton, Secretary of War, but however that may be it was a cruel blow to Virginia. It was generally believed that Mr. Lincoln favored the policy of restoration, and especially of Virginia, to the Union with the last possible friction. This belief seemed to rest on a sound basis for a while.

During President Lincoln's visit to Richmond immediately upon its occupation by the Federal

forces in 1865, he held two or three interviews with Judge Campbell, formerly of the Supreme Court of the United States and later of the Confederate War Office, and with other citizens among them Judge Henry W. Thomas who was Lieut. Governor of the state.

The expressions of President Lincoln in these conversations were marked by common sense and the vigor of expression characteristic of him. Judge Campbell said he told him "he wanted the very legislature which had been sitting up yonder, pointing to the capitol, to come together, and to vote to restore Virginia to the Union and recall her soldiers from the Confederate Army."

Judge Thomas said in answer to his suggestion that Governor Pierpont be sent down to Richmond, the President replied that he did not want him, adding "the government that took Virginia out of the Union should bring her back and is the government that alone can effect it. They must come here to the very place they went out of the Union, to come back, and you people will doubtless all return and we shall have old Virginia back again. By Jove! I want that old game cock back again."

Abraham Lincoln said: "We cannot escape history," and it is my intention to show that he cannot "escape history" made by himself any more than other men who have played a part on the stage of life. He cannot escape responsibility for the reconstruction which was begun by his change of mind in regard to the meeting of the Legislature of Virginia.

He cannot escape responsibility for the Civil War—for this the South has been blamed but such is not a fact. The fort of Charleston was built by the Federal Government, on land belonging to South Carolina and was held in trust for the defense of Charleston. The land was ceded to the United States by South Carolina for that purpose only.

When the Confederate States of America formed a separate government commissioners were sent to Washington to adjust these property rights and arrange for the honorable transfer of the property.

President Lincoln had been inaugurated and Mr. W. H. Seward was his Secretary of War and he refused to see these commissioners. They then appealed to two Justices of the Supreme Court of the United States to negotiate for them and Justice Nelson appealed to Mr. Seward to refrain from reinforcing Fort Sumpter by force for such "is a serious violation of the Constitution." This was the first of the acts of President Lincoln in disregard of the Constitution of the United States for which he had no respect whatever, as all his subsequent acts will reveal.

Mr. Seward told Justice Campbell that "the delay in evacuating Fort Sumpter was accidental," and on the day before this when he gave assurance that the garrison would be withdrawn he had sent a man to Charleston to see by what means the Fort might *be not evacuated but reenforced*.

On April 7, 1861, Justice Campbell heard rumors



of regarrisoning the Fort and wrote to Mr. Seward in regard to this hostile movement.

Mr. Seward replied to him: "*Faith as to Fort Sumpter fully kept. Wait and see.*" Regardless of this promise made by his Secretary of War, and in opposition to several of his Cabinet Officers, the Commander-in-Chief of the Army, and of Major Anderson who was commanding Fort Sumpter, President Lincoln ordered 26 guns, 2400 men and 11 war vessels to enter Charleston Harbor to take provisions to 60 men.

On April 12 General G. T. Beauregard expecting the fleet to enter the harbor at any minute, sent Major Anderson word that he would open fire, and when the fleet was in sight of the fort, General Beauregard "fired the shot that was heard around the world," as the first War Order had been issued at Montgomery, Alabama, April 9, 1861, "Fire on Fort Sumpter." President Lincoln immediately called for 75,000 troops, which act was unconstitutional, for Congress is the only power in our government authorized to declare war. The commissioners from South Carolina with the hopeful message that Fort Sumpter would not be held by the Federal Government were on the same train with President Lincoln's representatives who were going to each Governor to have him issue the call for these troops.

The great English historian, Hallam, says: "The aggressor in war, that is, he who begins it is not the first who uses force, *but the first who renders force necessary.*"

### XIII.

## MISSISSIPPI.

The measures enacted to prevent the extension of slavery in the Territory was the first time the State of Mississippi had given any consideration to the policy of secession, and as early as 1849 held a convention at Jackson to oppose this plan. Another was held in 1851 and the convention resolved to agree to the compromise measures of 1850 as a final adjustment of the controversy over slavery.

In this convention it was resolved that "the union was held second only in importance to the rights and principles which it was designed to perpetuate," and it was said there that the right of secession was unconstitutional.

At this time there was no secession sentiment of importance in the State, but in 1852 "Uncle Tom's Cabin" was published, and this with other events created bitter feeling toward the North, and the election of Abraham Lincoln to the Presidency added to this feeling.

The secession cause was led by Mr. L. Q. C. Lamar. In 1861 and on January 9, the ordinance of secession was adopted by 84 to 15 votes. Jefferson Davis was United States Senator from Mississippi and on the 12th of January resigned his seat there





GENERAL JOHN B. GORDON

of Georgia, Confederate States Army  
Assistant "Grand Wizard" of the Invisible Empire

(Courtesy of "Confederate Veteran.")



after endorsing the action of his State on secession in a magnificent farewell address.

The Governor of Mississippi said the call to arms has been responded to in Mississippi in a manner unknown to modern times, and the call for means to support the volunteers is being answered in a way to gratify the heart of every patriot. The women of the State responded to the call for assistance in such a manner as to call for thanks from the Legislature. Many persons offered private funds to equip the soldiers. Jefferson Davis and Jacob Thompson gave \$24,000.

The part played by Mississippi subsequent to this is well known, and is not intended to be a part of this history, but these points have been given to convince the most skeptical reader that although hoping against hope that she would not be compelled to withdraw from the Union, that she gave a good account of herself when forced to do so in defense of her States rights.

During the war that followed 47 battles were fought on Mississippi soil, the siege of Vicksburg lasted 47 days. In 1860 the census gave 79 thousand white men of military age while the enlistments of the Confederates during the entire war were 78 thousand; and, with what determination and bravery they resisted the invasion of their state is shown by the fact that 25,000 Federal soldiers killed during the war lie buried in Mississippi soil.

Later on in the war the hardships became so great in the army that it was not easy to fill the gaps made

in their ranks on many battlefields, and General Forrest issued a call for all males from 15 to 65 to rally to his support. He said he would "rob the cradle and the grave" in his effort to win the war. The legislature voted a resolution of thanks and a sword to General Forrest when he vowed to press all "skulkers" and "deserters" into the Confederate Army.

Early in the war salt became a scarcity and speculators begun selling it for high prices, but the Legislature came to the rescue and regulated the price. It was so scarce that many would evaporate salt water and obtain a coarse salt; the dirt under the old smoke houses was distilled and used again.

The war developed many ingenious ways of making the necessities of life. Flour was \$75 to \$200 a barrel; sugar \$2 a pound; coffee \$5 a pound; salt \$45 a bushel; men's shoes \$30 a pair; women's shoes \$50 to \$75 a pair; cotton goods \$30 per yard; watermelons \$25 a piece, and mules \$700.

After the invasion of Mississippi many of the citizens refugeed to other states and left many of their slaves who were unwilling to go, and they wandered into the Federal Camps where thousands of them were fed by the United States Government and this was the first cause of their being lazy and shiftless; and one of the Federal Officers, General Lorenzo Thomas, told them they must work or starve and that the men who were telling them they were to be given the land that belonged to the white people had lied to them.

Had others told them the truth a different story

could be told of the years of reconstruction, however, many of the best class of negroes did not leave their masters and continued with their work as was proven by the amount of cotton grown in Mississippi and other states.

As soon as the surrender of the Confederate Army was completed the United States Government had the idea that surrender meant the giving up of all their cherished sentiments and all their rights, public and private, and on this ground began the gigantic struggle known as reconstruction and was continued for more than eleven years until the Ku Klux Klan reconstructed for themselves and came back into the Union.

The history of the country from 1865 to 1877 will show positively that the Ku Klux Klan restored these states to the Union when the United States Government intended to keep them out. More than a year before the reconstruction investigation commenced the Commander-in-Chief of the Army of the United States had declared the war at an end.

The chief executive of the United States had recognized the government of seceding states as legal and many of the men engaged in the war received executive pardon, but Congress ignored all of these facts and proceeded to dissolve the Union. Every form of deviltry that the mind of man could conceive was invented and charged against the people and it is well to note that as this injustice increased the organization known as the Ku Klux Klan rose in power.

I wish to call the reader's special attention to the

fact that the Ku Klux Klan was not even thought of by its founders until December 24, 1865, and then note carefully the condition of Mississippi (which is typical of all of the Southern States) at the date, November 20, 1865, when Benjamin G. Humphreys, Governor of Mississippi, in his message to the General Assembly said: "What are the evils that have already arisen against which we are to guard the negro and the State?

"The answer is patent to all—vagrancy and pauperism, and their inevitable concomitant, crime and misery, hovering like a dark pall over a once prosperous and happy but now desolated land. To the guardian care of the Freedmen's Bureau has been entrusted the emancipated slaves. Look around you and see the results!

"Our rich and productive fields have been deserted by them for filthy garrets and sickly towns. From producers they have been converted into consumers, and as winter approaches their only salvation from starvation is Federal rations and pillage and plunder.

"Four years of cruel war conducted on principles of vandalism disgraceful to the civilization of the age was scarcely more blighting and destructive to the homes of the white man, and impoverishing and degrading to the negro than the result in the last six or eight months from the administration of this black incubus. How long will this hideous curse be allowed to ruin our people?

"Tax the Freedmen for the support of the helpless



Freedmen, and then with an iron will and a strong hand of power take hold of the idler and the vagrant and force him to some profitable employment for the support of his family and the education of his children, by laws assuring him of our friendship and protection.”

Governor Humphreys said that by the emancipation of over 300,000 slaves in Mississippi it imposed upon her a problem of vast magnitude the proper solution of which depended the hope and future prosperity of ourselves and our children.

Governor Humphreys was not the regular nominee for civil governor of Mississippi in 1865 but was elected by his comrades in arms who by this act indicated that Confederate soldiers were preferred over those who did not fight for the State.

In his own words, when elected, “I am yet an unpardoned rebel. I have taken the amnesty oath and forwarded an application for special pardon, and am desirous of renewing my allegiance to the United States Government.” President Johnson sent General Humphreys a pardon on October the first, and he was inaugurated on Oct. 16, but for some time he was denied recognition by the United States as Governor.

General J. Z. George, Brigadier General in the Confederate States Army and a brilliant lawyer was appointed by General Forrest as Grand Dragon of the Ku Klux Klan, of the Realm of Mississippi, and from that time on he was her great leader and in 1875 redeemed this state from radical and negro rule,

but not until this grand old state had suffered the humiliation of having two negro senators in the United States Senate and fifteen or twenty other negro officials, state and national.

General George, afterwards Senator from Mississippi, by his constructive statesmanship in devising means to safeguard Southern civilization by the elimination of the negro vote, will cause his name to shine for all time as a great constitutional lawyer and benefactor of the South. It was under his leadership that Mississippi led in disfranchising the negro and practically every Southern state has followed this plan.

After General George had redeemed Mississippi from "carpet-bag rule" he went to South Carolina and assisted General William H. Wallace in conducting the Ku Klux Klan until that State was also raised from her ashes and reinstated into the Union.

General George recommended to the men in South Carolina to impress the negroes both as to the strength and purpose of the whites in their determination to redeem the state by using a spectacular uniform different from the Ku Klux Klan and urged a parade of long processions of armed white men through the country. This plan was accepted and from this was founded the "Red Shirts of South Carolina" as their regalia was trimmed in red imitating blood stains.

Col. George W. Croft took up the scheme suggested by Gen. George and gave orders for the necessary yellow home-spun to make the gruesome regalia. The cloth was distributed one afternoon

among the ladies of the country and they were instructed to make them appear as large as Goliath of Gath would have worn.

These large shirts were turned into a flag with arms stretched over a cross piece and dough faces with kinky chignons were fastened to the top of this cross so as to make a grinning negro head from either side. Satan's appeal to the fallen angels was emblazoned in large black letters on either side: "Awake, arise, or be forever fallen."

In regard to falsehoods about Mississippi Ku Klux Klan outrages stated by H. B. Whitfield, Mr. Mathew Clay, of Brooksville, Miss., sent a sworn affidavit to the Committee of Congress saying: "I met Mr. Whitfield on the train as he was going to Washington and I asked him about the attack of the negroes on a Mr. Bridges of Bigby Valley, Noxubee County, Mississippi.

"I told him in substance, if he was going before the Washington Ku Klux Committee he ought to state the affair in which some armed negroes attacked Mr. Bridges at night; that I thought it ought to be shown that lawlessness existed among the negroes, or, in other words, all the so-called Ku Klux outrages did not originate among the white people of the South, but with the blacks who are not Ku Klux.

"Mr. Clay said that Mr. Whitfield misrepresented him in his testimony and that he received a letter from him in which he said he misrepresented him, and is willing to put it in writing, which he did."

During the Civil War the "Bonny Blue Flag" was first sung in a local theatre in Mississippi for General Nathan B. Forrest when he was assisting the people of Mississippi to recruit the Confederate States Army.







## XIV.

### GEORGIA.

In 1865 the Confederacy had fallen and Jefferson Davis had been made a prisoner on Georgia soil. He was taken away, was confined, and chains riveted upon him; was placed in prison and kept there two years without trial or bail.

There was a complete collapse financially of the State of Georgia from the Tennessee line to Savannah, Ga., covering Sherman's March to the Sea. He destroyed everything in his pathway for a region twenty miles wide. Everything was destroyed, schools, homes, crops, farming implements, railroads and even the lunatics and deaf and dumb were turned out without shelter.

Women and small girls were criminally assaulted by Sherman's army; cities were burned; Atlanta lay completely in ashes, but the devotion of the people to each other through all these misfortunes has no parallel in history. Persecution only endeared them to each other.

The population of Georgia in 1860 was 591,550 and the state furnished to the Confederate army 120,000 soldiers and the entire people pledged their lives and fortunes in support of the Southern cause.

When the war was over and they wished again to claim all rights they had at the beginning of the war it was denied them.

The governor was arrested by soldiers and lodged in prison, but later Georgia was readmitted to the Union and then denied the privilege because she refused to give the negro the vote and she was again made a part of the "Military District" which included Alabama and Florida and others.

The Freedmen's Bureau established in Georgia began to sow seeds of mistrust between the negroes and their former owners and this accounts for the hostility which ensued between the races and made the organization of the Ku Klux Klan a necessity and led that state to become one of the "Solid South" against the Republican party.

General Gordon stated at Washington in the Ku Klux Klan investigations, "That the Union League and Carpet-baggers were organizing the negroes and we were afraid to have a public organization because we supposed it would be construed at once by the authorities of Washington as an organization antagonistic to the Government of the United States.

"It was therefore necessary in order to protect our families from outrage and preserve our own lives, to have something that we could regard as a brotherhood—a combination of the best men of the country to act purely in self defense, to repel the attack in case we should be attacked by these people; mainly confined to soldiers of the Confederate States Army, men who had shown themselves plucky and ready for



any emergency, and who were accustomed to command.

"We never had any apprehension from the conduct of the negroes until unscrupulous men came among them and tried to stir up strife. But for such men we never would have had any trouble with the negro and would not have any now. We can get along forever with the negro, loving him and having him love us, if you will take away these Carpet-baggers.

"I am willing to swear until I am gray that the negroes and the white people can live together in Georgia peaceably and happily if they are not interfered with.

"The feeling of resentment against the reconstruction policy of Congress was intensified by the admission of the State of Georgia to the Union with the Constitution upon which the people refused to vote."

These words were spoken to the Committee Investigating the Condition of Affairs in the Insurrectionary States by General Gordon, and it is said in the report of the committee "that the feelings of the people of the South at the close of the War between the States, and the successive phases through which they have passed since then are so candidly stated by General John B. Gordon of Georgia that he may be fairly quoted as representing them in all of the Southern States, and that his opinion is of the highest value, and is especially so when it is remembered that he became the Commander of Stonewall Jackson's Corps at his death and at the surrender was in the command of the left wing of Lee's Army. That he

was Governor of Georgia and not under disabilities. General Gordon said: "I know that the general feeling of the North is that our people are hostile toward the Government of the United States.

"Upon that point I wish to testify; I want to state what I know upon that subject. I know very well that if the program which our people saw set on foot at Appomattox Court House when Lee surrendered had been carried out—if our people had been met in the spirit which we believe existed there among the officers and soldiers from General Grant down we would have had no further disturbance in the South. There is no question about that.

"But to say to our people, 'You are unworthy to vote; you cannot hold office; we are unwilling to trust you; you are not honest men; your former slaves are better fitted to administer the laws than you are'—this sort of dealing with our people has emphatically alienated us.

"The burning of Atlanta and all the devastation throughout the South never created a tithe of the animosity that has been created by this sort of treatment of our people.

"The feeling is that you have denied that we will abide by our plighted faith.

"We do not think we have done anything in the dark. We think that when we tried to secede from the Union we did it boldly, fairly and squarely, staking our lives on the issue. We thought we were right. I am one who thought at the time that we had a perfect right to do what we did.

“Our people were conscientious when they took the obligation at Appomattox and elsewhere after Lee’s surrender, and we would have long since had a very different state of things if the Government had kept their part of the contract contained in our parole. I believe that as firmly as I believe in my existence.

“I know it was generally felt that there was shown toward the officers and men who surrendered at Appomattox Court House a degree of courtesy and even deference which was surprising and gratifying—and which produced at the time a very fine effect.

“Whether right or wrong, it is the impression of the Southern mind—it is the conviction of my own mind, in which I am perfectly sincere and honest that we have not been met in the proper spirit.

“We believe that if our people had been treated in the spirit which we thought was manifested at Appomattox—a spirit which implied that there had been a conflict of theories, an honest difference of opinion as to our rights under the General Government—a difference upon which the South had adopted one construction, and the North another, both parties having vindicated their sincerity upon the field in a contest which now had been fought out was to be forgotten—if this had been the spirit there would have been no alienation.

“We felt as honest men that we should be trusted and we thought that ought to be the last of it. That was the way that we felt at the South, by the course that has been pursued toward us, since the surrender

we have been disappointed and the alienation has thus been increased."

General Gordon referred to a speech he made in Montgomery, Alabama, in which he spoke of the behavior of the negroes during the war when left to protect the women and children; when all the male population were away fighting and large plantations were left to be managed by the women not a single insurrection had occurred, not a life had been taken, not a criminal assault had been made upon any white woman by the negroes, although the Federal Army was inciting them to turn against their masters, and the helpless women and children.

This handsome behavior of the negroes was also praised at this time by General James H. Clanton, of Alabama, and in reward for it we both said the Southern people owed it to the negroes to educate them and give them a chance to rise within the confines of their race. Many negroes heard both speeches and came forward and thanked us.

The entire heart of Georgia and the South appreciates the conduct of the negroes during the war.

General John B. Gordon was elected United States Senator from Georgia by the General Assembly, and it was a signal victory for him, as his competitor was the most popular man of the state—Honorable Alexander Stephens, who was an idol of the people during a long career of service; he was elected Senator after the Civil War, but was not admitted. General Gordon however received that great honor, and the whole South was pleased for



he won his way to undying fame on the battle-fields and was the embodiment of chivalry and patriotism. Senator Gordon became a national figure in statesmanship, and fulfilled his trust brilliantly.

The "Gallant Gordon's" military career being so closely identified as it is with that of General Robert E. Lee and therefore well known it is unnecessary to describe it. He was one of the generals who made the last stand for the Confederacy, and when he received a message from General Lee on Apr. 9, 1865, at daylight to know what chance he stood to attack the Federals successfully, replied to General Lee, "My old corps is reduced to a frazzle, and unless General Longstreet can reach me at once, I can do nothing more."

General Lee said, "I have nothing left but to see General Grant." Colonel Venable who had brought this message from General Gordon said to General Lee, "O General what will history say about our surrender in the field?"

General Lee replied, "I know they will say harsh things of us; but they do not know how we are overwhelmed by numbers; that is not the question; the question is, is it right for me to surrender this army? If it is right I will take all responsibility." These words are considered the greatest utterance of General Robert E. Lee, and showed the noble spirit of the most beloved chieftain of all history.

General John B. Gordon was well known to me, and many times described this incident. After the surrender, which took place on that day, General Gor-



don returned to Georgia, and became one of its most honored citizens in peace as well as a valiant soldier in war. In appearance he was every inch a soldier, and retained his magnificent bearing until his death. General John B. Gordon was visiting Athens, Alabama, in the Fall of Sixty-six, and became fascinated with the movements of the Ku Klux Klan. He returned to Georgia, and in the early part of the following year organized Ku Klux Klans in that State, and attended the convention of the Ku Klux Klan at Nashville in 1867. He was there appointed by General Nathan B. Forrest, who was "Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire," to be Grand Dragon of the Realm of Georgia.

General Gordon had a brother living at Athens, Alabama, during the Seventies and he frequently came there to meet General Forrest and to go to Pulaski, the headquarters of the Ku Klux Klan, for information. This brother, Major Eugene C. Gordon, was chaplain of the Limestone County division of the Ku Klux Klan. He was a Baptist minister, and Mr. Austin W. Smith, a Methodist minister, was chaplain before Major Gordon came to Athens.

On one occasion General Gordon came hurriedly to Athens to confer with the Ku Klux Klans, there and at Pulaski, for a rumor had reached him from Florida that a woman "carpet-bagger" had come there and was making herself very obnoxious by entertaining negroes in her home, and otherwise associating on intimate terms with them, and that there was great excitement in the Southern part of Georgia

because it was said she was coming into that State.

He said he went to see who the woman was who was creating so much ill feeling in South Georgia and Florida, and found that it was Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe who had inflamed the world against the South by her iniquitous novel "Uncle Tom's Cabin" which President Lincoln said caused him to call for troops and declare war on the South.

General Gordon said he had been told that Mrs. Stowe had with her a wounded son who was a Federal soldier and had almost lost his reason, and that there should not be a blot on the South by having her or any other woman, who came within its borders, molested.

He said he was informed that the spurious Ku Klux Klan imitating the real Ku Klux Klan had determined to drive her from the State by taking her and her sick son on board a vessel for parts unknown, and the Ku Klux Klan from the headquarters in Pulaski sent a number of Ku Klux commanded by Captain John C. Lester and he was joined at Montgomery, Alabama, by General Jas. H. Clanton who was Grand Dragon of the Realm of Alabama, and they proceeded to Florida, and surrounded Mrs. Stowe's plantation on which she was attempting to raise cotton with free negro labor, and eventually arrested the spurious Ku Klux Klan and from that time until Mrs. Stowe left the South, she was guarded by the gallant Ku Klux Klan, for many threats were made to burn her home, and a school house and church she built for the negroes were burned, but no harm other than this ever came to her. General Gordon

gave me this information a few years before his death,—to illustrate the gallantry and the fulfillment of the ideal of the Ku Klux Klan to protect womanhood at all times, although Mrs. Stowe had so unjustly brought on the war by her falsehoods in regard to the system of slavery as operated in the South.

General Gordon was appointed by General Nathan Bedford Forrest assistant Grand Dragon of the Ku Klux Klan, when his health failed; he was the leader in the field while General Forrest directed the movements from his home.

General Gordon made many visits to Washington in behalf of the South, and his last appeal was to President Hayes to remove the troops from South Carolina and save bloodshed and disaster which would come if the officials elected by the people of South Carolina were deprived of their privilege of serving them.

General Gordon kept in close touch with the people of the South as Commander-in-chief of the United Confederate Veterans, and everywhere he went in this capacity he was shown the highest appreciation of his superior qualities as a soldier and citizen.

UNITED CONFEDERATE VETERANS' organization was formed in New Orleans, June 10, 1889. The idea for a large and united association came from Col. J. F. Shipp, a gallant confederate soldier who was at that time commander of Nathan Bedford Forrest Camp of confederate veterans of Chattanooga, Tennessee, the third that was organized.

Colonel Shipp was in New Orleans on business,

and while there suggested the united association, his idea being to bring into a general order the State camps as one in Virginia, and another in Tennessee had been founded. The first meeting was held in New Orleans, June 10, 1889, and the United Confederate Veterans was perfected with Mr. F. S. Washington of New Orleans, President, and Mr. J. H. Chalaron, Sec'y.

A constitution was adopted, and Lieutenant-General John B. Gordon of Georgia was elected Commander-in-chief, and served in this capacity until his death.

One of the highest tributes ever paid General Gordon was by Corra Harris, a famous Georgia writer. In one of her recent articles in the *Saturday Evening Post*, she wrote that General Gordon said, "should he be elected Governor of Georgia, he would kiss all of the girls in the state," and one of them which he kissed had a ring worm on her cheek proving that he was not even afraid of germs.

## XV.

### NORTH CAROLINA.

The reconstruction of the southern states was a "crime against the principles of free government for which no adequate punishment is provided by law." In this catalogue is to be placed the betrayal of constitutional liberty in its supreme home and by its especial guardians.

In the words of Zebulon B. Vance: "It was the destruction of the flock by the shepherd; the robbing of the ward by the guardian; the scandalizing of religion by a dissolute priest; the heinousness of such offenses consists of an element of faithlessness—a betrayal of trust—treachery."

This is a period in our history which should not be forgotten but which deserves to be studied by every patriot in the United States. To treat it from the Northern standpoint, secession was considered a settled question as several of the Northern states had considered seceding from the Union.

The Southern states believed they had a right to secede from the Union and repealed their ordinances by which they had accepted the Constitution of the Union, but the Northern states said: "No, you cannot do that.

"Your ordinances of repeal are void; you are still



in the Union and subject to the Constitution. Your attempt to maintain the validity of your ordinances by force is simply insurrection and rebellion which we are bound by the Constitution to suppress," and they began the Civil War and suppressed it, and their slogan in the beginning to induce men from the Northern states to join the army against the Southern states was: "Join the Army and help restore the Union."

Many northern men were opposed to the coercing of Southern states whose soil had been invaded, but the popular appeal to restore the Union was the only thing that filled up the ranks of the Federal Army. When General Robert E. Lee gave up his sword to General Ulysses S. Grant everybody supposed that the Federal Army had saved the Union.

Despotic governments exercised confiscation but under our government the right of sovereignty over any portion of the states is given and limited by the Constitution and was supposed to be the same after the war as it was before.

Indeed the moment the rebellion was suppressed and the government growing out of it was subverted, the ancient laws resumed their accustomed sway subject only to the new reorganization by the proper appointment of officers to give them operation and effect.

There were only two ways by which a state could withdraw from the Union:—"Legally by virtue of their ordinances or by force of arms. As the legality was denied and the resort to force was a failure the

conclusion is unavoidable, that *they were in* the Union,—subject to all the requirements and entitled to all the privileges under the Constitution.”

President Johnson immediately after the war appointed temporary governors with authority to appoint other officials and directed them to call conventions to form new constitutions and recognize the state governments in all branches.

He invited them under their new constitution to elect senators and representatives to Congress in their former way. North Carolina immediately followed these instructions and was recognized by President Johnson as a member of the Union.

“Notwithstanding this fact Congress for purely political reasons proceeded to treat all of these states as outside of the Union and as alien communities who were to be dealt with anew under the laws of conquest and admitted to the Union on conditions of its own imposing.”

These states were Democratic in politics; and it was not desirable to have the Union restored by the admission of eleven democratic states—that would seriously endanger the power of the Republican party.

Congress determined on conditions that would strengthen not weaken the Republican party and as they could no longer refuse their Representatives in Congress their seats, to do this *they dissolved the Union by an Act of Congress*, declaring that they were out of the Union.

They were placed under military rule, civil

authority was abolished and every civil magistrate displaced by military and "carpet-bag" officials. All this was done several years after the war had ended without the slightest provocation on the part of the Southern states save only that they *would* vote the Democratic ticket. The negroes were invited to vote though their suffrage was neither known to state or federal law while all other leading citizens were disfranchised.

In addition to this Senators and Representatives were denied admission at the doors of Congress. "No fact of history is more notorious. Naturally there could be no other than the worst of consequences attending a procedure thus begun in fraud and false pretense, and supported by force. Our English-speaking race has not known its like since the plunder of Ireland in the Sixteenth Century."

In the face of these facts is it any wonder that the Ku Klux Klan rose in power to rescue their state from such a condition which she succeeded in doing in 1870 after having suffered every humiliation at the hands of the scalawag governor, W. W. Holden, the man appointed provisional Governor of North Carolina after Governor Zebulon B. Vance had been ousted from this office to which he had been legally elected?

In the words of Zebulon B. Vance: "The people of North Carolina submitted with long-suffering patience. They were spirit-broken by the results of the war—the desolation of their homes and the slaughter of their sons. They were worn down to the

earth by the degradation imposed upon them by the negro-equality of the Civil Rights Bill and all the racking evils of the times. But a day was coming when their ancient spirit was once more to reassert itself."

The Ku Klux Klan, led by Zebulon B. Vance, Grand Dragon of the Realm of North Carolina, succeeded in driving from their soil the "carpet-baggers" and all other kinds of invaders, and impeached W. W. Holden from the office of Governor.

I will not attempt to describe the causes of impeachment except the misuse of the military, the suspension of the right of writ of habeas corpus and laws passed to suppress the Ku Klux Klan. Some facts regarding the falsehoods which were stated before the Committee of Congress Investigating Affairs of the Late Insurrectionary States, will be given. One of the most notorious and most dangerous of these false witnesses was one William R. Howle, from Chatham County, North Carolina.

He swore before the Committee to the "Ku Kluxing" of men and women, white and black, because of their loyalty; detailed his sufferings on account of his political principles; showed how bravely he had resisted, and how fearlessly he had brought to justice the rebel Ku Klux; he was a rare combination of the hero and the martyr.

Unfortunately for him an old republican, Elias Bryant, from his neighborhood, was called to testify on other matters, but it leaked out incidentally that



he knew all about the outrages to which Howle had sworn.

We quote from his evidence: When asked: "what kind of fellow is Howle?" He said: "Mr. Howle came to my house about eleven months ago. I looked upon him as a gentleman. He said he wanted to stay with me three or four days. I let him stay. After staying three or four days he paid me up like a gentleman.

"His general character through the country is very bad. I am bound to say that. I was told not to trust him, and that he was a man of no truth. He left our neighborhood about the latter part of April, and went to Richmond about the time the Buchanan case came up.

"In the Buchanan case, both men and women were whipped.

"There was a house down here kept by an old woman, from the North, the mother of a good many children. About five years ago she had a black child, —after she drove off her husband, a weak, pitiful kind of a fellow.

"She put up a distillery, making about a gallon of whiskey at a time. Her visitors are mostly colored men. She was a woman of very bad character and the character of the girls she had about her were the same.

"There was a woman by the name of Godfrey who went to live with this woman. I saw her in Raleigh, in a wagon with Mr. Howle. She had a little daughter about fifteen or sixteen years old, I suppose.



"She hired her out to a man named Dave Wickers. I am told that she is a very nice little girl. Her mother went after her to go there to this woman's house. The little girl refused to go and Wickers refused to give her up.

"The whole trouble grew out of this woman wanting to take that child to this old woman's house and the man refusing to give her up." (The Ku Klux rescued the girl.)

These are the sort of men upon whose testimony, or rather on whose statements of what they profess to have heard, Congress is expected to hold eleven states and nearly ten millions of people under the provisions of the Ku Klux bill, at the mercy of President Grant and his subordinates, when he was a candidate for re-election.

The whippings paraded by Howle, to avenge which he was put in command of United States troops, by whose aid he filled the jail in Raleigh with his enemies, or those he desired to prosecute in order to ingratiate himself with the Federal authorities, were such as any honest people would have inflicted under similar circumstances.

No man can read the evidence of Elias Bryant, without feeling that Howle and his prostitutes, in trying to force the unfortunate daughter of one of these hags into such a den of infamy as Bryant describes, to be the victim of the lust of Howle and his brutal associates, white and black, ought to have been whipped.

And if Colonel Schaffer had repeated the dose

when Howle, with "Old Sal," the "two girls, and the Godfrey woman" appeared before him, instead of prostituting his office and the Army of the United States to imprison the men who had rescued the innocent girl from the fate to which the brutes sought to consign her, would have elevated himself in the estimation of all honest men, even if he had been dismissed by the authorities at Washington for allowing the opportunity to escape, to raise the cry of Ku Klux, and malign the character of the people of North Carolina.

Unfortunately for the country, just such men as Howle have been the trusted agents of the United States in all these persecutions; and the whole machinery of the courts and the military has been run with an eye single to making political capital for the radical party, and to put money into the pockets of the tools used for that purpose.

A radical judge dismissed from the bar a leading member of it because he wrote a letter to a member of this committee stating facts which it was important for the committee to know; of course the Supreme Court reinstated him.

The Schoffner Act, by which the governor of the state was authorized to declare any county in the state to be in insurrection, and was given power to proclaim martial law, to arrest summarily and try by a drum-head court all accused persons, and to enable him to carry out this Act he was allowed to raise regiments of soldiers, caused the growth of the Ku Klux Klan.

One of these regiments was composed of negroes and the others of deserters, renegades and cut-throats. This vile assortment of men went to Raleigh to be armed and equipped. The dignity of North Carolina and the pride of her people rose with one accord to resist these desperadoes and the Ku Klux Klan, which had already been organized, was given great impetus in 1870 and was rapidly increased to meet the oncoming of these men who wished to further degrade the great "Old North State."

It was with the greatest difficulty that the older and more prudent men could restrain the Ku Klux Klan, and fortunately for this situation an election for Attorney General and the Legislature was soon to be held in August 1870, at this time.

Troops were stationed at all points to intimidate the voters and though Governor Holden had the support of President Grant the people went to the polls determined to redeem their state, which they did, as they were led by the Ku Klux Klan of North Carolina assisted by General Forrest and others of the "Invisible Empire."

The Legislature was largely Democratic, and it proceeded promptly to repeal all obnoxious legislation—including the issue of bonds, the Schoffner Act—and then impeached Governor Holden.

The Ku Klux Klan accomplished what they had planned to do, and proceeded to South Carolina to try and improve the conditions in that state.

The following letter is contained in the public records of Congress pertaining to the Amnesty of Jef-

person Davis and speaks for itself as to the treatment accorded Governor Holden by the Ku Klux Klan for trying to arrest them instead of the spurious Ku Klux Klan and for suggesting to President Grant to have Congress enact the Federal Anti-Ku Klux laws.

Mr. W. W. Holden, of Raleigh, N. C., said in regard to the Amnesty proposition for Jefferson Davis pending in the House of Representatives in a letter to Mr. Blaine of that Congress:

"In 1870 I was impeached and removed from office as governor of this state solely because of a movement which I put on foot according to the Constitution and the law to suppress the bloody Ku Klux Klan. This was done by the Democrats of this state, the allies and the echoes of Northern Democrats.

"I was also disqualified by the judgment of removal from holding office in this state. The Democratic Legislature of this State and its late Constitutional Convention were appealed to in vain by my friends to remove this disability.

"The late convention, in which the Democrats had one majority by fraud, refused by a strict party vote to remove my disabilities thus imposed; *and I am now the only man in North Carolina who cannot hold office.*

"I think these facts should be borne in mind when the Democrats in Congress clamor for relief for the late insurgent leaders."

Judge Albion Tourgee, who was a carpet-bag Judge in North Carolina, said in a book he wrote, "A



Fool's Errand," about the Ku Klux Klan: "It was a daring conception for a conquered people. Only a race of warlike instincts and regal pride could have conceived and executed it. It was a magnificent conception, and, in a sense, deserved success. It differed from all other attempts at revolution in the face of the enemy, an enemy of overwhelming strength. Should it succeed, it would be one of the most brilliant revolutions ever accomplished. Should it fail—well, those engaged in it felt that they had nothing else to lose."

This is, indeed, a tribute to the Ku Klux Klan, as it came from the enemy and one who claimed that he had narrowly escaped death at the hands of the Ku Klux Klan, and is significant.

**A PROMINENT CITIZEN OF NORTH CAROLINA CALLED  
TO TESTIFY BEFORE THE KU KLUX INVESTIGATING  
COMMITTEE DEFENDED THE KU KLUX AS FOL-  
LOWS:**

Washington, D. C., July 28, 1871.

Haywood W. Guion; (Mecklenburg, N. C.)

Called as witness by Mr. Blair, stated that he was then residing in Charlotte, N. C., and that he was born in the Eastern part of the state at Newbern. He said he was a lawyer, and had never held any public position.

Mr. Blair: "Answer generally whether the laws are executed in your state, the laws against crimes especially."



Mr. Guion: "Well, they are generally executed, the fault is in the judiciary, if anywhere."

Question: "They are perfectly safe in your state."

Answer: "Yes, sir, that is in some places there are outbreaks, but this danger to property is from the Loyal League—the burning of barns, the destruction of cattle, horses and mules."

Question: "Who compose the Loyal League?"

Answer: "I believe they are negroes and low white people. I am pained to say that in our state the judiciary system is a farce."

Question: "Does this opinion disincline the people to refer their differences to the judiciary?"

Answer: "*It inclines them in many cases to take the law into their own hands; that is the law of nature. A man will seek his own defense if he cannot get it any other way.*"

Question: "Are there any other organizations than the Loyal League?"

Answer: "As to the Ku Klux organization, I did not know of it until the trials before the judges at Raleigh last summer. And, the opinion that the troubles arise from the incompetency of the judiciary department is somewhat substantiated there by the evidence because Judge Tourgee, in whom there is very little confidence, is judge there. He is a foreigner, and thought to be a corrupt man."

Question: "Is it alleged and do you believe that this organization (the Ku Klux Klan), has originated there by reason of his incompetency?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, on account of his partiality in

punishing criminals, and in not sustaining the law as he should."

Question: "And that is the ground upon which the organization known as the Ku Klux Klan justifies itself?"

Answer: "*That is the only ground.*"

Question: "If you are at the head of it, it is a very harmless Ku Klux Klan?"

Answer: "*Very harmless.*"

Question: "You say there is a great deal of burning of barns and killing of cattle, that is done principally by negroes?"

Answer: "Yes, sir, altogether I believe."

Question: "For what purpose?"

Answer: "The story we get is that the instructions to them come from Raleigh where the head of the Loyal League is. I believe if there had been no Loyal League in North Carolina, there would have been no Ku Klux Klan or clubbing together of white people there."

Question: "You believe that one gave cause for the origin of the other?"

Answer: "I have no doubt of it."

## XVI.

### TEXAS.

The great State of Texas was separated from the United States by an ordinance of secession in a convention of the people on the first day of February 1861 and became one of the Confederate States of America. She furnished many thousands of troops to the Confederate army and did her full duty in that great struggle. But at the close of the war she was in a much better condition financially than any of the other Southern states as there had been very few invading troops on her soil and her citizens who were not in the army could continue to raise cotton and other necessities. Her population had been greatly increased by the number of people who went there as refugees from the other devastated states but this prosperous condition was to be the cause of her suffering equally if not more so from the "carpet-baggers" and thieves who went there as it was a land "flowing with milk and honey." "They did not send anyone to see but came themselves, and their name was legion."

Texas passed through the same sufferings of reconstruction but she more readily recovered from it for in being annexed to the United States she reserved her public domain and a large portion of this

was set apart for the maintenance of free schools and she more quickly begun to educate her children, both black and white after the war. The white people of Texas believed that the best remedy which might flow from universal suffrage was universal education, and with this in mind they thought it proper to give the negroes the advantage of a common school education as it would assist them to discharge the duties devolving upon them as American citizens. There was always a pleasant relationship between the negroes and whites of Texas and only in a few instances was there any conflict between the races. The military stationed there during reconstruction committed many more depredations and outrages than were committed by either white or black natives.

Governor Throckmorton, who was the Governor of Texas, at that time, applied to General Sheridan to send troops to the frontier to protect the people from the depredations of Indians and General Sheridan refused because the Governor had declined to pardon a criminal whom General Sheridan had asked him to pardon and in reply to his request for soldiers, General Sheridan said, "that he believed him to be an impediment to the reconstruction of Texas under the law," and further said: "There were more casualties occurring from outrages perpetrated upon Union men and freedmen in the interior of this state than occurs from Indian depredations upon the frontier." Governor Throckmorton replied to this statement made by General Sheridan, and said: "General, this is truly a shocking statement, and I exceedingly



regret that you have been so unfavorably impressed with the general character of the people of Texas, and that your information should be so incorrect. I am frank to admit that many violations of law occur in the interior of Texas; but that these things are the result of rebellious sentiment among the people, or that the outrages committed in consequence of this rebellious feeling are far in excess of the Indian depredations upon the frontier, I must solemnly and emphatically deny. You have heard one side of the story. Perhaps if the people or authorities of Texas had been as persistent and mendacious in their version of these affairs to you and your officers, as have been the howling crowd of canting, lying scamps, who were doing everything in their power to make trouble and produce alienation of feeling between countrymen, you might not think so badly of us. I most positively assert that, of all the outrages occurring in Texas since the surrender, but the fewest possible number have originated out of the feeling alluded to by you."

This was a flat contradiction of the statement that General Sheridan had made, and it possibly irritated him, but this was not all. Governor Throckmorton, in replying to the charge made by General Sheridan, that the people of Texas had perpetrated such numerous outrages upon Union men and freedmen, saw fit to call the General's attention to the fact that much crime in Texas had been perpetrated by Federal soldiers in his command. For in another place in his letter he said: "Suffer me to say that, of the



robberies committed upon freedmen in Texas, a great number of them have been by soldiers in his command, and others who have been discharged or deserted from it. It is undoubtedly true that the negroes in the localities of the troops are more afraid of imposition from the soldiers than from any other quarter. Many of the outrages that have occurred in Texas have been perpetrated by deserters and discharged soldiers from the Army of the United States. A band of 17 or 18 in one body went to general robbing, and are now in the state penitentiary. Another band of deserters from the Sixth Cavalry went directly north through the state from Waco and committed every species of outrage. Other squads who were discharged, traveled through the state on their way North, sometimes representing a Quartermaster and Commissary and giving receipts, and in other places taking by force."

This probably was, in the opinion of General Sheridan, what made Throckmorton an impediment to reconstruction and caused him to remove the Governor from office and led Throckmorton to issue an address to the people of Texas in which he said he had not been an impediment to reconstruction but to despotic powers.

As Charles Stewart says in the reconstruction of Texas: "Many of our citizens suffered in person and in property at the hands of licentious and irresponsible men who wore the uniform and marched under the flag of the United States. One of the most flagrant acts of this character was the burning of the

town of Brenham, on the night of the 7th of September A. D., 1866. It excited great indignation throughout the state. The legislature was in session at the time, and the governor very properly and prudently called their attention to the matter.

“In compliance with the recommendation of the governor the legislature sent a committee to Brenham fully authorized to obtain the facts, and from the report made by said committee we learn that on the night of the 7th of September, 1866, a party of United States soldiers took possession of a negro ball that was in progress in the house of a negro man in the town of Brenham. The conduct of the soldiers became so indecent as to cause the negroes to abandon their festivities and seek their homes. Infuriated because the ball had ceased, they sought to inflict vengeance upon some of the negro men who had helped to close it. They pursued one of them to a house where were assembled a number of white ladies and gentlemen and within their hearing, in the most profane and obscene language, abused the negro. Upon being informed by one of the gentlemen that ladies were present, and requested not to use improper language, they drew their pistols and transferred their abuse from the negroes to the white men, and cursed them as rebels, and threatened to shoot them, when two of the soldiers were shot, one being seriously and the other slightly wounded. The soldiers then retired to their camp taking their wounded companion with them, but during the night they returned and fired the town. It was indisputably

proved that the soldiers set fire to the town. The evidence showed that the soldiers who committed this outrage acted under the orders of their commanding officer, or that he connived at their conduct. When an officer of the state went to their camp with the authority of the law, to arrest some of the guilty parties, he was informed by the officer in command that the soldiers he wanted had the night before deserted. They certainly had been spirited away and have never been tried for their crime. Quite a number of houses were consumed and property to the value of \$131,000 was destroyed. The loss was sustained and divided among about 25 persons, all of whom were of moderate means and not able to sustain it. The United States has never paid one dollar of this loss. The burning of Brenham was exceptional only in the amount of property that was destroyed; certainly not in perfidy and wickedness. Numbers of our citizens were murdered by soldiers of the United States, and, in some instances, were deliberately shot down by them in the presence of their wives and children."

A witness before the Reconstruction Committee at Washington in 1866, Mr. John T. Allen, when asked about the condition of the negro in Texas said: "Some of them in towns can read and a few of them can write; some of them are quite intelligent, especially those who have been mechanics and have worked alongside of white men for a great many years; they have acquired the same knowledge as far as the ordinary affairs of life are concerned as the

white man, and it is an everyday occurrence to hear intelligent negroes consulted by white men on the plantation, in the work shop and on the stock farms in regard to the work and management of their respective affairs." This description of the condition of the negro in Texas holds good throughout all the slaveholding states. Many of their masters had them taught trades—shoemaking, blacksmithing, carpentering and bricklaying. Besides millions were trained farmers, and the women of this race were the best domestic servants the world has ever known. They were also taught sewing, spinning, knitting, the care of children and for their faithfulness in the discharge of this last work taught them, they are known as "Black Mammy," and the white children of the south reverence and love them, and they are still enshrined in the hearts of the South. Many instances of the fidelity of the black mammy during the dreadful war period and reconstruction are told to the children of today. There was one instance when a Federal regiment took a small boy away from his home to force him to betray where his brothers, who were Confederate soldiers, were at that time, as they were home on a furlough. When the officer took him on his horse and told him he would hang him if he didn't tell him where they were, the boy, ten years old, refused to open his mouth and his "Black Mammy" crazed with grief over the plight of her boy filled her apron with corn cobs and threw them at the regiment. This occurred near Athens, Alabama, when Thomas N. McClellan, son of Colonel Thomas Joyce McClel-



lan, was carried ten miles away from his home by these Federal soldiers and kept for several days, they trying all the while to make him say where his brothers were. He would not open his mouth and one of the younger officers in this command, having a boy of that age at his own home, told the commander of this regiment that he would resign if he did not let the boy go home, and there was great rejoicing when he came back and I feel that his mother was no more rejoiced to have him than was his "Black Mammy" Lucy. This boy became Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Alabama; after having become distinguished he received a letter from the young Federal officer who interceded for his life in which he said he had never seen such magnificent control as he showed as a child.

From an economic standpoint, and, in justice to the negro race, which has no better friend than I, I ask the reader to remember that the South in 1861 was the richest part of this country and that these riches were based on slave labor, and that the negroes were not the helpless and shiftless race that the next generation became directly after the Civil War while they were being supported by the government, for none of the older and well trained negroes would accept this help, but went on working as best they could under the conditions which were brought about in the South by the reconstruction and the Spurious Ku Klux Klan which was formed in Washington to go South for the purpose of creating a disturbance between the races. There were not so many negroes in Texas at that time and that question did not trouble



the people so much there as where they outnumbered the whites ten to one as in the cotton raising states of the Old South.

When General George A. Custer was asked how many loyal men there were in Texas, he said: "It would be hard to find a man who had been strictly faithful to the Union. They forced all the Union men to leave the state and that I did not consider it safe for a loyal man to stay in Texas."

When he was asked the question: "Suppose the general government should become involved in a war with France or England, if he thought the people of Texas would fight against the United States flag," he answered: "I think that the most sensible and those inclined to be loyal would fight for the flag."

"Do you think any outspoken Union man could be elected to Congress in Texas," he was asked.

He answered: "I do not think any man but one who had borne a prominent part in the Confederate States Army or was in opposition to the Federal Government could be elected. Certainly no 'loyal' man could."

The people of Texas remembered the period of reconstruction with more bitterness than the years of the Civil War.

In 1869 a radical governor was elected and he so mismanaged the affairs that he and his associates brought on irretrievable ruin to the Republican party.

The democrats held a convention in Corsicana and arraigned the radical administration as they had done in their former platform in 1871.

This convention declared the "national administration to be destructive of the rights of the states and of the liberties of the people."

When this radical governor was "reëlected" illegally he applied to President Grant for troops to assist him in being inaugurated. This radical governor filled the Capital of Texas with troops, most of them negroes, the night before he expected to be inaugurated, but the Democrats took possession of the legislative halls during the night. He again appealed to the President for military aid and through the Attorney General he replied: "The President is of the opinion your right to the office of governor is at least so doubtful that he does not feel warranted in furnishing United States troops."

The radical governor then left the capital and radical misrule was at an end and this was accomplished by the Ku Klux Klan under Colonel Roger Q. Mills and other great Texans. Colonel Mills gave me this fact about the Ku Klux Klan.

## XVII.

### MISSOURI.

In 1861 Missouri was opposed to the Secession of the States, and sought earnestly to occupy a position of neutrality; a large portion of her inhabitants were southern in their origin and for this reason this State was under suspicion by the United States government and at the beginning of the War between the States was promptly occupied by the troops of the United States. At the time there were two bodies of troops in the State—Militia or State Guard of Missouri, which was made up of one brigade from each Congressional District, and by an order of the Legislature was placed under the command of Major-General Sterling Price, and the United States Troops under General Harney, who was commanding the Department of the West which included the State of Missouri. General Price was a Union man. He had served in the Mexican War, had been Governor of Missouri, and was a born commander of men, and was qualified to discharge this responsible position. The law required an annual encampment of the Militia and in 1861 the place selected for it was about half a mile from the city of St. Louis, between Olive and Laclede Avenues, known as Lindell's Grove. In May, 1861, several

companies of Militia numbering 636 men and 50 officers commanded by General D. M. Frost, went into camp and named it "Camp Jackson" for Governor Claiborne E. Jackson, the Governor of the State. No sentinels were set to guard against surprises at this camp, which showed there was no hostility toward the United States government contemplated.

General Harney was absent from St. Louis and Captain Nathaniel Lyon of the United States Army was in charge of the Union Troops in St. Louis. Captain Lyon was a New England man and hated the South and Southern institutions, and believed in coercion. Captain Lyon had the impressoin that the Militia of the State intended to attack his men and get possession of the arsenal, which was altogether false, but he wrote the War Department at Washington asking to increase his forces by enlisting troops from the solid German population in one portion of St. Louis. President Lincoln gave him permission to raise ten regiments and by May 10, 1861, he had raised seven regiments and he had drilled them secretly without causing any alarm. He had two regiments of Regular United States soldiers. General Frost heard that Captain Lyon was making preparations to attack Camp Jackson. General Frost addressed a communication to Captain Lyon stating that he had no intention of attacking the arsenal or the United States troops, and that he was only at Camp Jackson under the Constitution of the State to drill and train the Militia; and that no flag



but the stars and stripes, and the coat of arms of the State had ever floated over this camp, and that if necessary he would offer the whole power of the State to protect the United States in the possession of the arsenal and other Government property. Captain Lyon would not accept this letter as sincere on the part of General Frost and answered: "Your command is regarded as hostile toward the Government of the United States. It is made up of secessionists, is in correspondence with the Confederacy, and is acting under the orders of the Governor of Missouri who is a Rebel. I therefore demand an immediate surrender of your command and dispersion of your troops."

The three hundred thousand people of the city had no knowledge of the condition of the military affairs, but were plying their vocations when suddenly on the 10th of May, Lyon put his army in motion. They marched in platoons, reaching from curb to curb, up the principal streets toward Olive Street. The appearance of this formidable army naturally created great excitement, and people left their business; and men, women and children followed the troops, the number increasing as they went. This was just as the schools of St. Louis were being dismissed for the day, and the children joined in the procession, and though unalarmed followed to Lindell's Grove where Camp Jackson was situated. Captain Lyon immediately surrounded it and demanded its surrender. General Frost protested against this *unlawful procedure*, but made no resistance and surrendered, as it



was inevitable. After the State Troops had surrendered and been disarmed, Captain Lyon ordered his troops to open fire on the spectators, killing and wounding many of them.

There have been various versions given of this incident. General Frost in his report says: "After we were disarmed and had surrendered a fire was opened on a portion of us by Lyon's troops, and a number of men put to death; together with several innocent lookers-on."

Captain Lyon in his report to Col. L. Thomas, Adjutant-General at Washington, says: "My command on returning to their station were fired upon by a mob which fire was returned by the troops, from which, all told, on both sides, about twelve persons were killed, two of whom were United States troops."

It is stated by P. S. Sanderson, an army clerk, that after being fired upon Captain Blondowsky ordered the United States Troops to fire upon the crowd.

However the incident was brought about it had great bearing on the future course of the State of Missouri in regard to the War between the States. It is stated as a fact that these troops who fired on the crowd of innocent people were for the most part Germans, speaking a different language, who were employed by the Government to serve with Lyon's forces and who had only a crude conception of the issues at stake and therefore were unrestrained from deeds of lawlessness and violence.

A lad from the group of boys in a spirit of bravado

or boyish sport threw a clod of dirt at a mounted German officer and struck him on the leg. This officer drew his sword and gave the signal to fire. The helpless citizens ran to the other side of the square for protection and were fired upon from that direction. During the firing upon these innocent victims a woman was killed with a baby in her arms and a young girl was shot to death.

Captain Lyon then took all the troops through the city as prisoners of war to the arsenal where they were kept until paroled by General Harney.

One of the greatest blunders committed by the United States was the taking of Camp Jackson and it could have been avoided had the Union leaders in St. Louis listened to the counsel of conservative men such as Harney and Price. But Lyon was prejudiced and there were Radical politicians at Washington who were urging him on to this great wrong to Missouri.

Indignation spread rapidly over Missouri and involved her in a war with the general government. The State was cut off from supplies of arms and ammunition and there was thrown into her defenseless boundaries an organized army of ten thousand troops, and all the hard-fought battles and all the outrages perpetrated by both Northern and Southern parties in Missouri during the war and immediately after, may be traced to this deplorable affair, as it set a precedent to the Union soldiers to disregard personal rights which menaced the personal safety of all Southern men. It took from Missouri all

civil protection, it stimulated oppression on the one side and provoked retaliation and revenge on the other. Missouri's only hope was to stand upon her constitutional rights which were denied her.

The tragedy of taking Camp Jackson inflamed the minds of the people throughout the State and they openly advocated war. Governor Claiborne Jackson issued a proclamation on June 12, 1861, calling for fifty thousand volunteers to defend the State against this invasion. After the proclamation General Lyon began to move his army toward the capitol of the State, taking one regiment of regular United States troops, Col. Frank P. Blair's volunteers, and Lieutenant Totten's battery, by steamboats. Other troops under Col. Franz Sigel went by rail. They reached Jefferson City the next day and took possession of the town without resistance as the Governor and State officials had left the capitol city. Lyon went on up the Missouri River and landed a few miles below Boonville where he met with stubborn resistance from the citizens, but who were without artillery and not being able to withstand Totten's battery, retreated.

General S. G. Sturgis of the Federal Army came from Leavenworth, Kansas, to Springfield, Missouri, and joined the Lyon forces on July 31st.

General Sterling Price was rapidly recruiting an army of State Troops in the meantime near the Arkansas border, he was there joined by Gen. Benjamin McCulloch's command of Arkansas and Texas troops and one Louisiana regiment under Col. Lewis

Hebert, called the "Pelican Rifles." The two armies were well matched in numbers but the Federal troops were well armed while a number of mounted men under Price were without arms of any kind. The battle of Wilson's Creek was fought eight miles from Springfield on August 10, 1861, and lasted seven hours and was one of the bloodiest and hardest-fought struggles during the entire war. Most of the Southern men had never been drilled while those of the Federal troops were well equipped and trained, having served in the United States Army. General Sigel's men were German volunteers and had served in their country. However, General Sterling Price was a veteran of the Mexican War, and General McColloch was a Texan veteran who had helped to avenge the butchery of the heroes of the Alamo at San Jacinto. The attack was quite a surprise to their army when Totten's battery opened fire from a hill overlooking their camp which is now known as "Bloody Hill." The fighting was at close range and it was a fatal day for Captain Lyon and his command when he brought his lines within easy range of the double-barreled shotguns of the Southern frontiersmen. The Union army was completely routed, and just three months from the day Camp Jackson was taken by Lyon's army, he was completely beaten and himself slain while rallying for one more charge. Then the battle suddenly ended and the victory of Wilson's Creek was emblazoned on the arms of the Confederates.

In St. Louis a convention was called arbitrarily



and the offices of Governor and Secretary of State were declared vacant, and a Mr. Gamble was appointed Governor. The State had yet passed no act or form of secession, but the army had assumed common cause with the seceding States, and on Nov. 2, Governor Jackson called a meeting of the Legislature at Neosho, and they passed an act ratifying an agreement made between the State and the Commissioners of the Confederate Government by which Missouri was to become a member of the Confederacy, and they elected George G. Vest and John B. Clark, Sr., to the Confederate Congress at Richmond. "Citizens who had been enjoying life-long freedom dwelling in the full liberty of their peaceful and quiet homes, faring sumptuously on the rich products of a virgin soil, which their industry had reclaimed from its native state, and under a government which they regarded as the best in the world, little dreamed of the trying ordeal through which they were so soon to pass—disfranchisement, the invasion of the sacred precincts of homes by military searches, confiscation of property, exposure to indignities, prison and banishment—and for what offense? Divested of fanaticism and passion, the impartial historian will answer: "Because he advocated and defended the sublime principles of State sovereignty."

Missouri bore a conspicuous part in the War between the States by those who were enlisted in the Southern cause.

In the Confederate States of America, Second Congress, first session, the following joint resolution

of thanks to Missouri officers and soldiers in the Confederate service, was adopted and approved May 23, 1864:

“RESOLVED: By the Congress of the Confederate States of America, That the thanks of Congress are eminently due and are hereby tendered to Brigadier-General F. M. Cockrill and the officers and soldiers composing 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, 5th, and 6th Regiments of Missouri Infantry; 1st, 2nd and 3rd Regiments of Missouri Cavalry; the batteries of Bledsoe, Landis, Guibor, Walsh, Dawson, and Barrett; and Woodson’s detached Company, all in the service of the Confederacy east of the Mississippi River, for the prompt renewal of their pledges of fidelity to the cause of Southern independence for 40 years unless independence and peace, without curtailment of boundaries, shall be sooner secured.”

In the year of 1864, on February 13, the era of “reconstruction” began in Missouri. By an act of the general assembly there was a convention provided to amend the state constitution and it went into effect, it was known as the Drake convention because one of its members, Charles D. Drake “was the controlling spirit and absolutely dominated his timid and inferior colleagues.” The third section of the instrument which the convention adopted, was as follows:

“At any election held by the people under this constitution, or in pursuance of any law of this state, or any ordinance or by-law of any municipal corpora-

tion, no person shall be deemed a qualified voter, who has ever been in armed hostility to the United States, or to the lawful authorities thereof, or to the government of this state; or has ever given aid, comfort, countenance or support to persons engaged in any such hostility; or has ever, in any manner, adhered to the enemies, foreign or domestic, of the United States, either by contributing to them or by unlawfully sending within their lines money, goods, letters or information; or has ever disloyally held communication with such enemies; or has ever advised or aided any person to enter the service of such enemies; or has ever, by act or word, manifested his adherence to the cause of such enemies, or his desire for their triumph over the arms of the United States, or his sympathy with those engaged in exciting or carrying on rebellion against the United States; or has ever, except under overpowering compulsion submitted to the authority, or have been in the service of the so-called (Confederate States of America); or has ever left the state and gone within the lines of the armies of the so-called (Confederate States of America), with the purpose of cohering to said states or armies; or has ever been a member of, or connected with, any order, society or organization inimicable to the government of the United States, or to the government of the state, or has ever been engaged in guerilla warfare against the loyal inhabitants of the United States, or in that description of maurauding commonly known as bush-whacking, or has ever knowingly and willingly harbored, aided, or countenanced

any person so engaged; or has ever come into or has left this state for the purpose of avoiding enrollment for or draft into the military service of the United States, or has ever, with a view to avoid enrollment into the militia of this state, or to escape the performance of duty therein, or for any other purpose, enrolled himself or authorized himself to be enrolled, by or before any officers as disloyal, or as a southern sympathizer, or in any other terms indicating his disaffection to the government of the United States in its contest with rebellion, or his sympathy with those engaged in such rebellion, or having ever voted at any election by the people in this state, or in any other of the United States, or in any of their territories, or under the United States shall thereafter have sought or received under claim of alienage, the protection of any foreign government, through any counsel or other officer thereof, in order to secure exemption from military duty in the militia of this state, or in the army of the United States; nor shall any such person be capable of holding in this state, any office of honor, trust, or profit under its authority; or by being an officer, counsellor, director, trustee, or other manager of any corporation, public or private, now existing, or hereafter established by its authority; or of acting as a professor or teacher in any educational institution, or in any common or other school; or of holding any real estate, or other property in trust for the use of any churches, religious societies or congregations. But the foregoing provisions in relation to acts done against the United



States shall not apply to any person not a citizen thereof, or who shall have committed such acts while in the service of some foreign country at war with the United States, and who has, since such acts been naturalized, or may hereafter be naturalized, under the laws of the United States; and the oath of loyalty hereinafter prescribed when taken by any such person shall be considered as taken in such sense."

The constitution also provided that the general assembly should enact laws for the registration of voters, and that no one should be allowed to register or vote until he had taken an oath in accordance with the section above mentioned, but that the taking of such oath was not conclusive as to loyalty, but might be negated by other evidence, the registry officers being the only judges.

The ninth section provided that no person shall practice law, or be competent as a bishop, priest, deacon, minister, elder, or other clergyman of any religious persuasion, sect or denomination, to teach, or preach, or solemnize marriages, unless such person shall have first taken, subscribed, and filed the expurgatorial oath required as to voters by the third section.

Under these provisions the parent who had given a piece of bread or cup of water to a son in the service of the Confederate states, or who had in any way expressed sympathy for such son was prohibited from registering as a voter, or serving as a juror, or teaching in any school, or preaching the Gospel, or solemnizing any religious rite. A more inhuman, atrocious,

and barbarous instrument than this constitution was never invented.

Of course, the constitution was declared adopted, but with all the means that could be invented by partisan malevolence.

So monstrous was the outrage, that many leaders of the Union party denounced the constitution and refused to take the oath prescribed.

On January 14, 1867, the case of Father John A. Cummings, a Roman Catholic priest, who had been indicted and convicted for administering the rites of his church without first taking the oath prescribed by the Drake constitution, came before the Supreme Court of the United States, the state of Missouri being defendant in error. It was held by Justice Field, delivering the opinion, that the Missouri test-oath, as it was termed, was in violation of those provisions of the Federal Constitution which prohibits any state from enacting a bill of attainder, or *ex post facto* law, and was therefore null and void.

Corrupt politicians of the republican party controlling the vote of paupers and vagabonds (the Drake Constitution having excluded from the ballot box most of the property holders from the state), issued without the knowledge and without the consent of the people more than \$15,000,000 in county and municipal bonds for the supposed purpose of building railroads which never existed except in the minds of the speculating politicians. The principal and interest of these bonds to be paid by the tax-payers. In vain did the plundered people appeal to the courts.

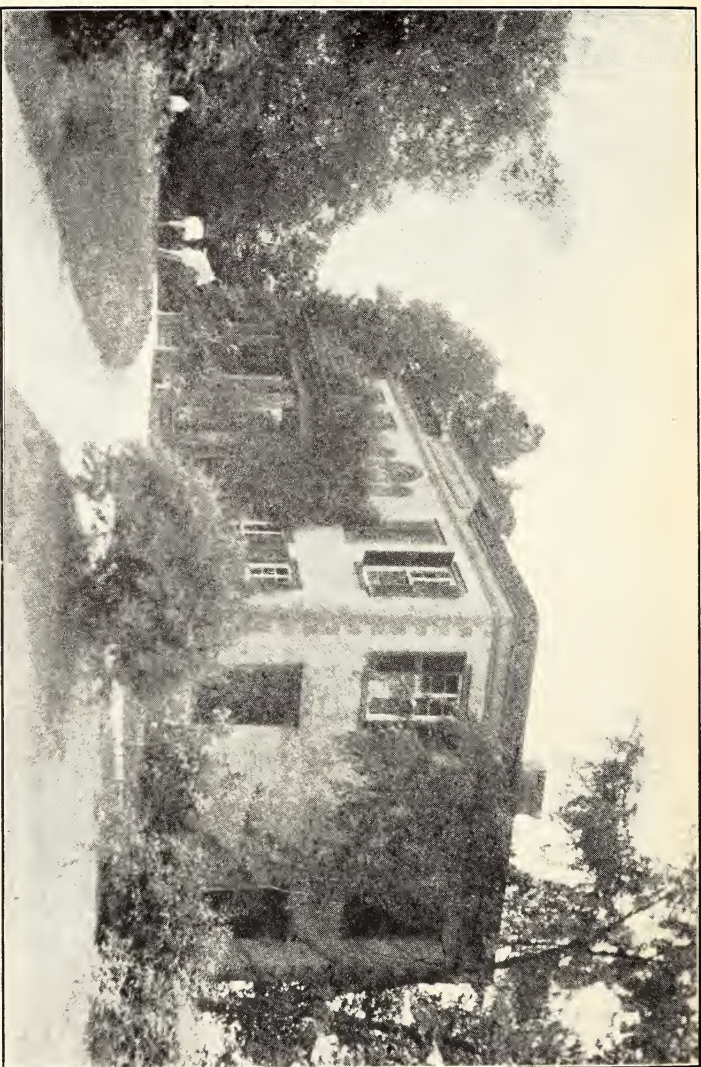
It is hoped that never again will be witnessed upon this continent the reign of fraud and outrage to which the people of Missouri were subjected during these years of republican supremacy. Reconstruction in Missouri cost the taxpayers of the state heavily.

The dishonest financial management of Missouri will stand as a monument of the reconstruction period in that state. In 1872 the democrats regained their control of the state and by strict economy and honesty with the moneys of Missouri they were enabled to pay these unjust war debts and to increase the value of their bonds. It is to be hoped that no state will ever have to pay fraudulent debts from which they cannot escape, as Missouri did growing out of the reconstruction.

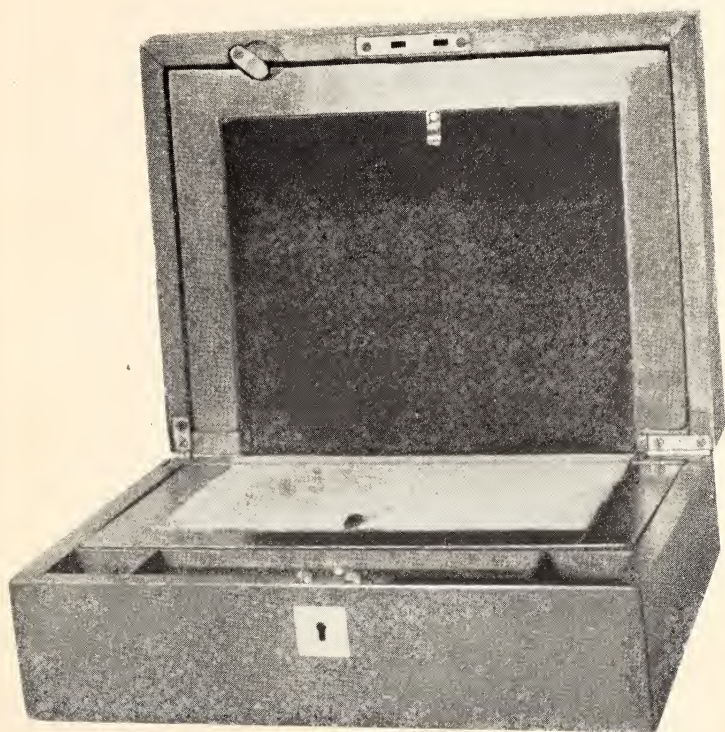
The Ku Klux Klan was organized in Missouri in 1868 and was one of the leading factors in the redemption of the state. I knew personally the gallant soldier and stainless southern gentleman, Captain Clarke Kennerly, who was Grand Dragon of the Realm of Missouri of the "Invisible Empire," and who gave me this information. He was a valiant soldier in the Mexican war and marched with his command from Missouri to the City of Mexico, and was a Confederate soldier.







Home of General William H. Wallace, Union, South Carolina, who was Speaker of the "Wallace House" and Grand Dragon of the Realm of South Carolina (Invisible Empire). Captain James A. Townsend, first Cyclops, founded the first Ku Klux Klan in the House.



This lap desk of rosewood was presented to Mrs. William H. Wallace by her former slave, John Wallace, who was a negro member of the Radical Legislature of South Carolina in 1874, as a token of his devotion to his "Ole Missis" and it is now treasured for this reason by her granddaughter, Margaret Gage (Mrs. Morris W. Bush), Birmingham, Ala.



## XVIII.

### ARKANSAS.

The facts of Reconstruction in Arkansas were stated by W. M. Fishback as follows:

“To obtain a clear appreciation of the state of things in Arkansas during reconstruction it will be necessary to show how the ‘carpet-bag’ government was put upon our people by Congress; also the sort of government it was. It is well known that the Southern people had returned from the Civil War utterly impoverished. Nothing was left for the support of themselves and their families except their own courage and manhood. The people trusting implicitly upon the good faith of Congress pursued their labors feeling assured that nothing damaging to their interests would be consummated without their consent.

The constitutional convention met and formulated a constitution which was so unrepblican in its schedule that the people did not dream Congress would approve it and accordingly not half of them voted upon its ratification. This constitution gave to three men, James L. Hodges, Joseph Brooks and Thomas M. Bowen, such absolute control of the election of state and county officials under it that they could elect or defeat whom they wished.



They were given power to select such judges and clerks of election as they saw fit. They were given power to reject or count all votes which seemed to them legal or illegal, fraudulent or rightful. Section eleven of this constitution gave these election judges the right to allow any vote with which they might be satisfied

The "carpet-bag" politicians elected under this constitution knew there was likely to be trouble as soon as the people should find out how they had been betrayed and how wantonly they were to be plundered of every sacred right of the citizen.

Although General C. H. Smith, U. S. A., commanding the District of Arkansas, wrote his superior officer that there was no state of facts existing in Arkansas to warrant such a step, the governor upon the flimsiest pretext declared martial law in many of the counties in the state. Negro militia marched and maurauded and murdered at will through these counties.

The legislature passed at this time an amnesty act forbidding the punishment of any of the murders or outrages committed by this negro militia. It protected a multitude of wanton crimes.

In the face of these outrages what was there then about the republican party as our people know it to commend it to self-respecting, patriotic men of the South? Surely, after reading these facts it will not be hard for our fair-thinking fellow citizens of the North to account for the *solidity of the south* and the

organization of the Ku Klux Klan in Arkansas, which was led by

## GENERAL ALBERT PIKE.

General Albert Pike was born in Boston, Massachusetts, December 29, 1809. When he was four years old his parents removed to Newburyport in the same State, where young Pike grew to manhood, getting the usual education of the times in the common schools, supplemented by a few terms at a private school in the same town and at the academy in Framingham. He began to teach school at the age of fifteen and when sixteen passed an examination for and entered the freshman class at Harvard. Owing to straitened circumstances he paid for his board and tuition by teaching during the fall and winter at Gloucester. He fitted himself while teaching to enter the Junior class in the fall of 1826 and passed the necessary examination, but owing to a misunderstanding with the faculty regarding his tuition fees he returned home and educated himself, going through the prescribed course of studies for the junior and senior years while teaching. He taught in Fairhaven and afterward as assistant and principal in the grammar school at Newburyport and then for several years in a private school in the latter town, until March, 1831.

In the spring of 1831 he started for the West, walking much of the way, and for the next few years traveled, explored, traded and lived among the In-

dians, learning their language and customs, and by his honest and straight-forward association with them, gained a confidence which thirty years afterwards, during the great Civil War, made him so useful and powerful among them in the cause of the Confederacy which he espoused, and later in the prosecution of claims against the U. S. Government in their behalf. General Pike commanded a regiment and afterward a brigade of Indian troops, C. S. A.

He settled in Little Rock in 1833 and it was there that he became editor of the *Arkansas Gazette*, studied law and wrote for some of the magazines. His series of poems entitled "Hymns to the Gods," which were written earlier, some of them while surrounded by pupils in the classroom, he sent to the editor of *Blackwood's Magazine*, Edinburgh, Scotland, John Wilson, who published them about 1838, pronouncing him "The coming poet of America" and remarking that "These fine hymns entitle their author to take his place in the highest order of his country's poets" and that "His massive genius marks him to be the poet of the Titans," but his poem "Every Year" is called his masterpiece.

General Pike was a Captain of Cavalry in the Mexican War where he served with distinction, participating in the battle of Buena Vista and afterwards riding a distance of five hundred miles, from Saltillo to Chihuahua, through a country swarming with the fugitive soldiers from Santa Anna's defeated armies, with only forty-one men of his command, receiving the surrender of the city of Mapini on the way.

About 1851 he transferred the practice of law from Little Rock to New Orleans, practicing also before the Supreme Court of the United States, returning in 1857 to Little Rock where he remained until the outbreak of the Civil War, when he served as commissioner for negotiating treaties with the Indians and as Brigadier General in the Confederate States Army.

After the War between the States he resided in Memphis, Tennessee, for several years, moving to Washington about 1869, where he resided for the remainder of his life. His death occurred on April 2, 1891, in the eighty-second year of his age.

He joined Free Masonry in 1850 and in less than nine years became the highest ranking officer in this institution, becoming Grand Commander of the Supreme Council of the 33rd Degree for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States, which is the "Mother Supreme Council of the World" and was founded at Charleston, South Carolina, May 31, 1801, and which office he occupied from 1859 until his death in 1891. General Pike became universally known throughout the masonic world by reason of his activities in promoting the growth of this branch of Free Masonry and it was his genius that evolved the modern rituals of this masonic rite out of the older rituals in use in earlier times.

As a lawyer he was one of the foremost jurists of his day. As a scholar, philosopher, poet and master of languages he ranked with the most eminent, and as a soldier and statesman his ability was unques-



tioned. He has been called the "Homer of America" and "The Zoroaster of modern Asia." It was when he was sixty-five years old that he began the study of the Sanscrit language and after mastering this ancient and now obsolete tongue was fourteen years translating the Vedas and other sacred books of the East. Besides poetry and his numerous masonic writings, he wrote on law, politics, philosophy, military science and general literature. His manuscript writings total in round numbers 36,000 pages and his printed writings total about 25,000 pages. Practically all of his works are to be found in the Library of the Supreme Council at Washington.

It is an interesting fact and significant of the man that he never published any book for sale. With the exception of his legal briefs, whatever he had printed was done at his own expense for private circulation or was donated to the Supreme Council of the 33rd Degree over which he presided for so many years. His versatile mind, genius, and tremendous energy are best illustrated by a perusal of the bibliography of his writings which is in print.

On his death-bed he took up an old-fashioned pencil and calling for a slip of paper wrote this now famous thought:

"Shalom!—Peace—that comes with blessing to care-fretted weary men, when Death's dreamless sleep ends all suffering and sorrow."

James D. Richardson, 33rd Degree (Tennessee) said in his address at the dedication of the Memorial to General Pike, the magnificent Temple of the

Supreme Council on 16th Street, Washington, D. C. "When he closed his eyes in death the greatest light that ever shone in Free Masonry, in any land, went out. Scottish Masons everywhere, no matter what language they spoke, knew him and bore testimony to their reverence and admiration for him. The Grand Bodies of the Rite in many other lands delighted to honor him; in addition to the high honors bestowed upon him by the Mother Supreme Council of the World he was Honorary Grand Commander of the Supreme Councils of Brazil (United), Egypt and Tunis; Honorary Member of the Supreme Councils for the Northern Jurisdiction of the United States, France, Belgium, Italy at Torino, Spain, England and Wales, Ireland, Scotland, Greece, Hungary, Nueva Granada, Canada, Colon, Peru, Mexico and Uruguay."

For the foregoing biography of General Pike, I am greatly indebted to Wm. L. Boyden, 33rd Degree, Librarian of The Temple of the Supreme Council of the 33rd and Last Degree of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Free Masonry of the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States of America, Washington, D. C.

Part of a set of chess men was taken from the mountain home of Albert Pike when it was raided by a detachment of the Second Kansas, U. S. A. Cavalry, who were camped near Little Rock, Ark., in the summer of 1863. When they returned to camp they distributed their booty and these chess men fell to the lot of Capt. E. S. Stover of Co. B.

Soon after the war he moved to New Mexico and became Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Scottish Rite Masons there.

In 1915, after so many years, and when he was then over 80 years of age (though now dead) he returned them to be placed among the relics of General Pike in the Library of the SUPREME COUNCIL.

These old-fashioned chess men were like the ones in my home with which General Forrest played a "make believe" game with me when I was a little girl.

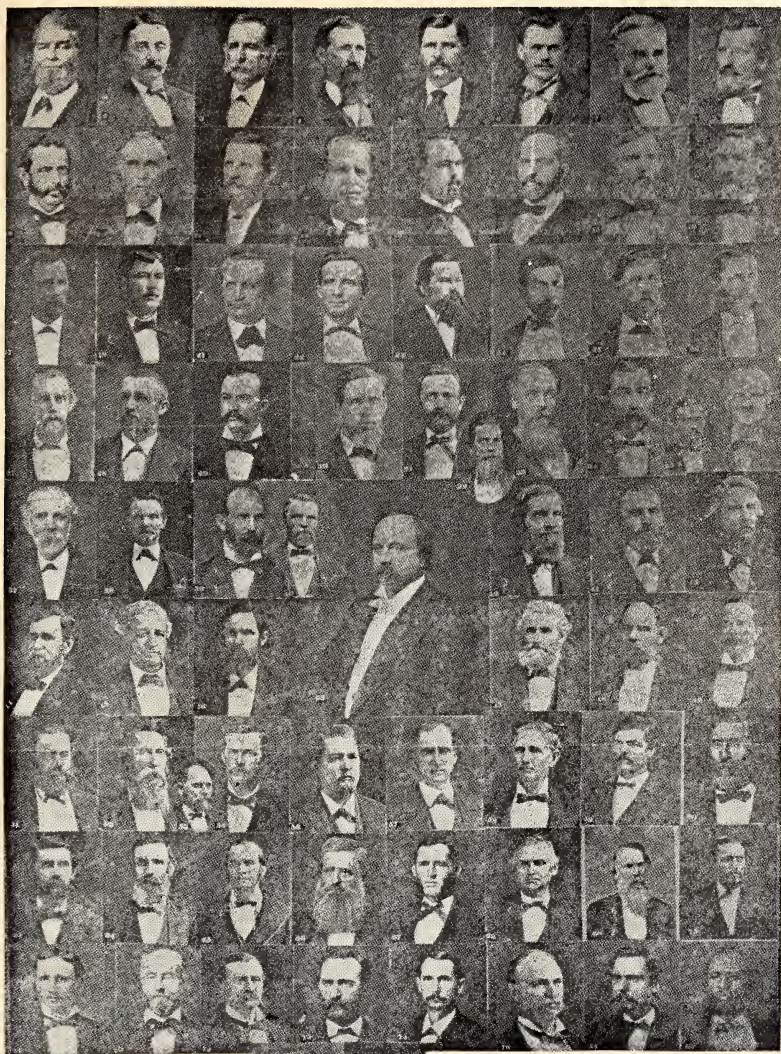
General Albert Pike had a most remarkable memory, and one of his greatest feats in this line was reproducing entirely from memory the Scottish Rite Ritual, all copies of it having been destroyed by fire in Charleston, S. C., when it was burned by the Federals during the Civil War.

General Pike organized the Ku Klux Klan in Arkansas after General Forrest appointed him Grand Dragon of that Realm at the convention at Nashville, Tenn. He was also appointed at that time Chief Judicial Officer of The Invisible Empire. He advised in this capacity that the Ku Klux Klan memorize their Ritual and to never make it public.

I have made diligent effort to obtain a written Ritual and have requested hundreds of the original Klan to recite this for me and they have always said that this one secret would never be revealed.

General Pike appointed Mr. Henry Fielding and Mr. Eppie Fielding of Fayetteville, Arkansas, to assist him in organizing Dens in that state. They were members of the Athens, Ala., Klan from its be-





THE WALLACE  
HOUSE

Organized November  
28, 1876

which redeemed South Carolina from "Carpet Bag" and "Negro Rule." Speaker Wallace in Center.

(See page 215 for other names)

(Contributed by Mrs. Margaret Wallace Gage,  
daughter of General Wallace, Birmingham, Ala.)





ginning and went to Arkansas, to live in 1867. They were Confederate soldiers, and gave me much information about the powerful influence General Pike had over the people of Arkansas during the dark days of reconstruction.

In 1872 Arkansas had two governments operating at one time and civil war was threatened and great excitement prevailed against the Washington Government. General Pike called a mass meeting at Little Rock, Ark., in the Capitol building and appealed to the people to be patient until better times would come and assured them that he would go to Washington and intercede for them, which he did many times.

At this meeting General Pike unfurled the Stars and Stripes and in a most beautiful manner, asked the people to follow it, which thousands of them did, promising him to be patient until the Ku Klux Klan could redeem the state.

## XIX.

### FLORIDA.

At the time of the reconstruction of Florida the old party leaders of the anti-bellum days had been disfranchised and silenced and there was no political organization in a condition to resist the republican plan of controlling this and other Southern states by the negro vote directed and managed by their party friends who had drifted southward with the Union army, or that afterwards followed in its wake.

The democrats nominated for their governor Colonel George W. Scott who had been famous as a bold cavalry leader during the latter part of the war and was at the time of the election at the head of a large mercantile business in Tallahassee. All machinery of the election was in the hands of the Osborne faction of the republican party. It was held under the ordinance framed by their convention that the inspectors should continue under the law for three days to have the custody of the ballot boxes each night. Ballot boxes were constructed with flat bottoms for use of the large negro counties and though the aperture through which the votes were passed was carefully sealed each evening and the key was ostensibly entrusted to one who did not have the control of the box an ingenious slide enabled the

custodian, in the seclusion of his home, during the quiet of the night, to mould the majority at his will. The result of the three days' election was the adoption of the Osborne constitution notwithstanding the general belief among the supporters of the democrats that this was not the true result, but they could only submit to the power of the general government. This was but one of the few tricks used by the republican party to gain their ends in holding the political control over the state of Florida and forcing upon the citizens of that state their own wanton reconstruction laws.

Mr. Malachi Martin of Jacksonville, Fla., stated that during reconstruction in Florida a Mr. McClellan and his daughter and some other parties were on the stoop of a hotel, and a Mr. Coker was on the stoop with others. "I understood that they heard some parties on the street, and that they supposed there was a colored man there who was a constable, a man of the name of Calvin Rogers. McClellan said that he recognized his voice giving the command to fire. The impression is that they intended to kill Coker, but, by accident, Miss McClellan was killed and her father wounded.

This was one of the outrages that was reported throughout the Northern press, as having been done by the Ku Klux Klan, and all of the witnesses testified that they saw the act, and there were no Ku Klux visible.

Any violent death in any part of the South was



reported as Ku Klux outrages, regardless of the facts.

It was said that the radical government had resorted to a rate of taxation under which the people suffered and every branch of industry was crippled. These taxes were not determined by the owners but by a very incompetent body. The election frauds were a matter of grave concern and depended upon the skill of a board of canvassers who would count into office any radicals that they wished.

From the period of 1868 to 1877 was only record of extravagance and corruption. Crime had gone unpunished, no schools or public buildings had been built since before the war, and yet millions of money had been extorted from the people by these extravagant "carpet-baggers."

Florida had a worse thing to endure during reconstruction than had any of the other states of the South and that was the presence within her borders for about ten years of Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe whose libelous novel "Uncle Tom's Cabin" undoubtedly caused the Civil War. She settled on a plantation which had been taken away from the owners by some men from the North and associated openly and freely with negroes inviting them into her home on perfect equality, and as she afterwards stated, she fed many of them expecting them to pay and found that they were only free boarders. She lost a great deal of money in her experiment of raising cotton on free labor. The Ku Klux Klan, even after they had disbanded in 1877 and were again

ready to go to work for themselves, as many of them had lost years of their time guarding the women and children, continued to guard Mrs. Stowe for several years after that period for she would come and go between her home in Massachusetts and Florida.

## XX.

### SOUTH CAROLINA.

Many people of the State, including General William H. Wallace, had asked General Hampton to return home and become a candidate for governor of South Carolina, which he finally consented to do.

The annals of Republican rule in South Carolina at that time "Is engraven with a pen of iron" upon the memory of the people of the State, which was suffering from the worst administered government that ever asserted authority over a civilized people.

This condition in South Carolina made the "Struggle of 1876" absolutely inevitable. The dark cloud which had hung so long over this State began to be mysteriously and suddenly lifted by the Ku Klux Klan, and Wade Hampton was elected governor of South Carolina, but the end of tyranny was not quite yet, for Governor Chamberlain had been reelected by the Republicans.

General Hampton said: "The people of South Carolina have elected me Governor, and by the eternal God, I intend to be their Governor."

He remembered the promise of General Nathan B. Forrest that the support of the Ku Klux Klan should be his, and he felt assured that he would be seated.

General William H. Wallace was elected to the Legislature in 1874, and at the same time his former slave, John Wallace, was elected by the Radicals. When this Radical government was spending millions and charging it to the State, this negro man would not buy anything except a desk which he said he would like to have to give to his former mistress, Mrs. William H. Wallace. The desk he purchased is now owned and prized by one of Mrs. Wallace's grand-daughters, a patrician beauty, Mrs. Margaret Gage Bush, and is shown in the picture, furnished me by her for this book.

General Wallace was reelected to the Legislature in 1876, and afterwards was made Speaker of what is known as the "Wallace House."

General John B. Gordon, and General Wade Hampton went to Washington to intercede with the President to withdraw the Military from South Carolina and allow Wade Hampton to be seated as governor.

General Forrest had requested General Gordon to ask Captain John C. Lester of the Pulaski Ku Klux Klan to accompany him to Washington, and authorized him to say to President Grant that the strength of the Ku Klux Klan was greater than it had ever been and stood ready for any emergency, for the people of the South had determined to seat the white legislature and governor.

President Grant did not heed their request and there was enacted in the State House of South Carolina the most tragic travesty on government ever



staged in the entire world in any age, known as the "Dual Government." Two governors claimed the seat—Chamberlain of the Republican Party, and Hampton of the Democratic Party. General W. H. Wallace had been elected Speaker of the Democratic House, and E. W. M. Mackey was elected Speaker of the Republican House.

When the time came for the opening of the General Assembly Mr. Mackey came upon the Speaker's stand accompanied by several persons not members of either body. The other side of the Speaker's stand was occupied by William H. Wallace and several Democrats. Mr. Mackey said to Mr. Wallace:

"Sir, the hour for the beginning of the session of the House has arrived, and I would be obliged to you for the Chair."

Mr. Wallace replied:

"The House is already in session and the Speaker is already in the Chair."

Whereupon somebody brought Mr. Mackey a chair and the joint session began.

The suddenness of the Democratic movement left no time for concerted action on the part of the Republicans, and there was no attempt made then to eject the Democrats by force. Neither did the Democrats make any effort to eject Mackey.

A large body of the regular army of the United States was quartered in Columbia, in the State House, and the War Department had instructed the officers to protect Governor Chamberlain from domestic violence. It was known that Chamberlain was

sending directions to these troops, and a number of them were brought into the State House by his command.

But the joint session proceeded. Speaker E. W. M. Mackey became much excited when told by Speaker Wallace that he was in the Chair, and walked over towards Wallace. Then Mackey called his Sergeant-at-Arms, who was a negro; Speaker Wallace called his Sergeant-at-Arms and as they both came forward, they were followed by both Radical and Democratic members. Trouble was imminent, until Speaker Wallace requested his House to be seated, which they promptly obeyed.

For several days the Speakers kept their Chairs, and night after night they slept as little as possible. Each day a roll was called for each House. The Journal was read for each House. The pretended business for each House was gone through. Bills of both Houses were introduced and discussed at the same time. The Wallace House consisted of 66 members, and the Mackey House consisted of six white men and fifty negroes.

There were often Speakers on both sides talking at the same time. After several days the Wallace House was joined by two negroes, Thomas Hamilton, and N. B. Meyers, who were members of the Mackey body. Hamilton made a speech in which he justified himself for leaving the Radical body. This dual House continued until Dec. 4, 1876, when the Wallace House was informed that a large constabulary force, supported by Chamberlain, who was hold-

ing the office of Governor and who had the support of the commanding officer of the garrison, had his troops ready in the State House, and would enter during the day and would eject certain members of the Wallace House.

The Wallace House was well armed, and knowing that the Ku Klux Klan, increased by tremendous numbers, were marching to their assistance from all the Southern States in case of a conflict, and that more than fifteen thousand commanded by Captain John C. Lester, were within easy call of the State House, armed and ready to resist, and with reinforcements sufficient to annihilate the troops, General Wallace maintained his policy of patience for which he was renowned, and decided to stay no longer in the State House.

He arose and said:

“Gentlemen of the House of Representatives: I have just been informed that there are now in readiness upward of one hundred men who are about to enter this Hall for the purpose of ejecting certain members upon this floor. The members for whom it is intended that the force shall be applied, have been recognized by this House as members, and we dispute the authority of the State government to eject from this floor any member of this House upon the ground that he is not a member of the House of Representatives of the State of South Carolina.

“We insist that this House is the only competent authority to pass upon the qualifications of its own members. The force to which I have alluded is acting

by and under the authority of Governor Chamberlain and under his commission. The Chair is given distinctly to understand that if that force is resisted by the members of this House, the military force of the United States will be invoked to its assistance.

"That assistance will be rendered by the United States, not for the purpose of upholding another body claiming to be the House of Representatives of South Carolina, but, upon the grounds, that that force is under the Government, and that the action of the Military is in support of the Executive authority of the State.

"With the view of preventing a collision upon this floor in which lives may be lost and blood shed; with the view of preserving the public peace; with the view of submitting to a proper and legal arbitration all the rights we claim on this floor; the Chair is of the opinion that this House should withdraw from this Hall.

"While we assert our rights as the legal Representatives of South Carolina, while we dispute any authority under the sun to decide for us who have rights upon this floor, but solely for the purpose of preserving peace and preventing bloodshed; and of conforming our conduct to the public teachings of the political leaders of the State, I am of the opinion, that this House should withdraw to another Hall.

"It is not essential to the House of Representatives that it sit in this Hall. The Constitution of South Carolina requires that the General Assembly



shall meet in the City of Columbia, and with a view of giving emphasis to the reason why I withdraw, I desire to repeat, that while we claim and insist upon our legal rights for the purpose of keeping the peace and preventing blood-shed we will repair to another Hall and exercise the functions that appertain to this body.

“I may as well state that the only House that can exist in South Carolina is a body consisting of 63 members. That constitutes a quorum of that body under the Constitution, the membership of that body being fixed at 124; the Constitution also provides that a majority of these members is alone competent to do business. I therefore, gentlemen, upon the grounds stated, and for the reasons given, while insisting that we are the only Constitutional House of Representatives in South Carolina, for the purpose of preventing bloodshed, recommend that we do adjourn to another hall in this city.”

After this appeal of General William H. Wallace, the “Wallace House” of Representatives adjourned to the Carolina Hall, and proceeded to function until the session closed Dec. 22, 1876.

While Speaker Wallace was delivering this classic of courage and consecration to the rights of his State, and which immortal appeal led to its redemption and to the saving of the Republican form of government in this country, General John B. Gordon was pleading with President Grant at Washington to remove the troops from the State House and inaugurate Hampton as Governor to save the bloodshed which

would come if the people of South Carolina, led by the Ku Klux Klan should be forced "to fight with their backs to the wall." But President Grant promised no relief.

The plans of Governor Chamberlain to cause the clash between the Wallace House and the soldiers he had sent to the State House had been discovered by the Ku Klux Klan in a mysterious manner, and Speaker Wallace was notified of Chamberlain's plot to send a proclamation into the Hall requiring all persons to leave it, by Captain John C. Lester, who, being a stranger was ejected from the Hall of Representatives by the Sergeant-at-Arms; but not until he had delivered his message to Speaker Wallace from the Ku Klux Klan.

Under this proclamation all members of the body presided over by Mr. Mackey were to be conducted to the Adjutant-General's office on the lower floor of the State House in which the soldiers had been stationed to resist an attack.

It was expected that the House presided over by Speaker Wallace would disregard Chamberlain's proclamation and remain in the Hall, and that would bring on the struggle which would destroy Wallace's body, and preserve the body over which Mackey presided.

The plot was defeated by the wise decision of Speaker Wallace to withdraw from this Hall. This was a tremendous moment for the South and particularly for South Carolina, for a collision would have been inevitable between the two bodies if the

attempt of Governor Chamberlain to bring on bloodshed on the part of the Wallace House had succeeded.

On the day that the Speaker left the Hall, the legality of the Wallace House was being considered by the Supreme Court, in the proceedings under the petition for mandamus against Hayne and Mackey. There were other plots planned by Chamberlain but before they could be executed that court had solemnly adjudged that the Speaker of the Wallace House was lawfully elected by a Constitutional Legislature of South Carolina and that Mr. Mackey was not entitled to his seat.

Mr. Mackey having been judicially declared to be without power to give legislative sanction to any measure passed by his body, and without power to levy and collect taxes, and as presiding officer no power to declare the rules of the election of Governor and Lieutenant-Governor, there was no reason for the continued existence of the body known as the Mackey House, and it was dissolved forever.

The returns of the election had been unlawfully delivered to Mr. Mackey and the copies had been deposited in the counties of the State. They were sent for by the Wallace House and on the 14th of December General Wade Hampton was declared by Speaker Wallace to be the Governor of South Carolina.

In the words of General William H. Wallace, "On the same day in an open square of this city, Columbia, South Carolina, the grandest inaugura-

tion of Governor and Lieutenant-Governor ever witnessed in this State was celebrated. Thousands with uncovered heads listened in silence while the oath of office was administered and taken with the solemnity befitting the occasion.

"This was the crowning act of the deliverance of the people and the redemption of the State. The pent-up feeling of the present multitude found expression in cheers, hoarse with emotion. They felt that this was no idle ceremony; that the step had been taken after full consideration, and was now a great consummated fact that no human power could reverse. Hampton and Simpson were Governor and Lieutenant-Governor. Patriotic struggle was rewarded. The bitter cup of political humiliation had passed away; the State was ours, with all her cherished traditions and proud history, was again ours."

After this triumph of the people their patience was tried to the point of desperation because Governor Chamberlain still assumed to be Governor of South Carolina.

On March 4, 1877, President R. B. Hayes was inaugurated, and he requested Governor Wade Hampton and Governor Chamberlain to come to Washington, after General John B. Gordon and Captain John C. Lester, representing the Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire who was at that time ill, delivered General Nathan B. Forrest's message to President R. B. Hayes, "That the Ku Klux Klan requested him to devise some policy by which the Mili-



tary would be withdrawn from the South, and the people left in peace with the negroes as employer and employee, with separate schools, no social or political equality and if this was not done, they would insist on the negroes being colonized or deported as was Lincoln's intention and which had been the policy of the whole country regarding all free negroes since the foundation of our government.

The idea of the "colonization" of *free* negroes was not new, for as far back as 1817, the South and the North, both felt it was best for the whole country that they should be colonized. Before the period of negro servitude had ended in most of the North Atlantic States, societies for the purpose of colonizing them were organized; and in the South in 1817 this plan had the earnest support of W. H. Crawford, Henry Clay, Andrew Jackson, John Marshall, John Tyler, James Madison, James Monroe and other leading Southern men, who were slave owners.

In 1856 General John Tyler wrote: "The citizens of the Southern States since the adoption of the Constitution, have emancipated two hundred and fifty thousand negro slaves. Assuming the average value of these slaves to have been five hundred dollars, the citizens of the Southern States have contributed one hundred and twenty-five million dollars towards emancipation.

"And when we consider that in almost every case of individual emancipation at the South, a sum equal to the full value of the slave has been invariably given to him to enable him to purchase a home for





JAS. F. WILSON, Iowa.  
BENJ. F. BUTLER, Mass.

GEO. S. BOUTWELL, Mass.  
THADDEUS STEVENS, Penn.  
JOHN A. BINGHAM, Ohio.

JOHN A. LOGAN, Illinois.  
THOMAS WILLIAMS, Penn.

The Managers of Impeachment of President Andrew Johnson which failed by one vote, when Senator Edmund G. Ross answered "not guilty" and saved the Executive branch of our Government.  
(Photograph by Brady, Washington, D. C.)





"The Lone Figure in Gray"

COLONEL LEE CRANDALL

of Washington, D. C., who is 91 years old, and marched from the White House to the Capitol at President Harding's funeral, wearing his Confederate uniform, thus epitomizing the unity of our Nation.

—Washington Post.





himself, and in addition to this the immense sums contributed to the "Colonization Society" by others, we do not exaggerate the sum voluntarily bestowed in this way by the South, when we set it down at two hundred and fifty million.

"This immense sum has been paid not by a rich public treasury, but by private families who lived by labor of the slaves they surrendered; not with the slightest hope of pecuniary emolument, but from no other possible motive than quiet and conscientious sentiment." (De Bow's Review, December 1856.)

So in point of unselfish devotion to the true interests of the negro, his financial, moral, physical and spiritual welfare—the South was in the lead before the Civil War.

It is a well-known fact that President Lincoln approved of deportation or colonization of the negroes after the Civil War and the Ku Klux Klansmen who went to discuss the problem with President Hayes, reminded him of President Lincoln's policy.

President Hayes is said to have been deeply impressed with the earnestness of these Southern gentlemen, and not wishing to further harass and worry them into greater retaliation, he issued an order to the Secretary of War, to remove the troops from the State House of South Carolina, and at noon, on April the 10th, 1877, the order went into effect. This same day Chamberlain notified Governor Hampton of his intention to surrender to him the Executive Chambers; and on April the 11th, the transfer of the papers and seal was made and Gov-

ernor Hampton began his service as Governor of South Carolina, and called the General Assembly to meet in Special Session, April 24, 1877.

The Wallace House met in the House of Representatives on April 24, 1877, and commenced to discharge its duties as the House of Representatives of South Carolina, thus ending the "Revolution of 1876" with as little blood-shed as could have been possible under the circumstances.

The "Wallace House" will live in the hearts of liberty-loving people forever, for through their courage they maintained the dignity of the judicial tribunal, and abided by its just decision, and this struggle of 1876 settled forever the supremacy of the white man's government so far as the South is concerned.

Until this day Sir Arthur Balfour's declaration holds good, that "The admission of inferior colored races to participation in government would destroy civilization itself." This fact is as firmly established in the minds of the Southern States as it is in England in regard to the South African Confederation to which Balfour had reference.

"The Spirit of 1776" which made Moultrie man his palmetto log fort and destroy Sir Peter Parker's fleet pulsed in the bosom of every Southerner and made possible the victory of 1876,—the triumph of the whites over the blacks; of civilization and progress over barbarism and the forces which were undermining the foundations of our country, and destroying republican form of Government."

William Henry Wallace was born in Laurens County, S. C., March 24, 1828, and died March 21, 1901. His family was of Scotch descent and had been long residents of that county. His father, Daniel Wallace, was a member of Congress. William Henry Wallace was prepared for College at Cokesbury, S. C., and graduated from the South Carolina University in 1849, and began the study of law.

He was admitted to the bar in 1860. The same year he was elected to the Legislature of his State and served two sessions. Called by the voice of his state to arms he left the Legislature and joined the 18th South Carolina regiment when South Carolina seceded.

He entered Company A as a private, but was appointed adjutant before he reached Virginia, and was soon promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel. At the second battle of Manassas his regiment was engaged in fighting and he succeeded to full command when Col. Gadberry was killed.

Col. Wallace then commanded his regiment in all the engagements of Longstreet's Corps and in such a manner as to merit the praise of his superior officers and gain the confidence of his men. After the explosion of the mine at Petersburg, Va., he succeeded Gen. Elliott as Brigadier-General. His brigade consisted of the 17th, 18th, 22d, 23d, 26th and the Holcombe Legion, and at the surrender of Appomattox it was a part of General John B. Gor-



don's (formerly Stonewall Jackson's) corps, Bushrod Johnson's division.

The surrender of Lee's army came and the last infantry fighting was from General Wallace's command. Strange to say in one of the hottest of the battles he was struck by bullets eight times but was never severely wounded. This is another instance in the War between the States of a private from the ranks ending his career as Brigadier-General.

After the close of the War he practiced law and served several times in the Legislature. When the reconstruction measures were applied to South Carolina he was made chairman of a county convention to arouse the people to rise up against and deliver themselves from this radical government.

In 1872 a compromise was made with the Republicans by which a ticket composed of Independent Democrats and Republicans was sent to the Legislature on which was elected General Wallace for the Democrats and his body servant, John Wallace, a negro, on the Republican ticket. This negro was devoted to his former master and was at all times respectful to him although he was put in this political position by the Radicals.

In 1874 General Wallace was again elected to the Legislature and in 1876 when the people had determined to rescue the state from Radical mis-rule, his services were most powerful. His most useful political work and the most dangerous was presiding over the Wallace House, which at last freed South

Carolina from negro and carpet-bag rule, with the assistance of the "Invisible Empire."

(General Wallace's daughter, Mrs. Victor Gage of Birmingham, Alabama, and his grand-daughter, Mrs. Morris Bush, who is one of the most patrician beauties of Alabama, have rendered me great assistance in compiling the biography of General Wallace.)

F. J. Moses, Jr., a white man, a native of the State, whose character is properly delineated in the words of Governor Chamberlain, was Speaker of the House of Representatives, and he and his associates, seventy-two whites and eighty-five negro members, took office in July, 1868.

The Governor who was inaugurated was General R. K. Scott from Ohio, and was one of the agents of the Freedmen's Bureau in the State and they began the reconstruction of South Carolina. Their first act was to refurnish the halls of legislation in the State House, replacing chairs that cost one dollar with crimson plush gothic chairs, for four-dollar benches, two-hundred dollar crimson plush sofas.

The whole finishings cost \$50,000, but they appropriated \$95,000 to pay the bill for sundries, supplies and such debts. \$350,000 were appropriated, thus the State was plunged into needless debt by these unprincipled men.

During this time a threat was made to impeach Governor Scott, and he paid Speaker Moses \$10,000 for his rulings against it. During the six years 1868-1874 Scott was the governor, F. J. Moses was the Speaker of the House of Representatives, whose

chief mode of plundering the state was to issue illegal pay certificates and this was known as the "Legislative Ring."

There were ten messengers employed and he issued one hundred and forty certificates one session. He issued this session \$1,168,225 worth of certificates, all of which except \$200,000 was robbery of the State. Yet this F. J. Moses, Jr., was elected to succeed Scott and the robbery continued.

As Speaker of the House of Representatives, the debt of the State had increased from \$5,407,306 to \$18,515,000. The taxpayers of the State had no voice in legislation and were reduced to trying some form of relief. Knowing the State government would not aid them they organized in 1871 the Taxpayers' Convention of which they issued an appeal to the country and the President of the United States for assistance, but none came.

A committee was formed to go to Washington and personally appeal to the President and it was hard for them to raise money to go there, but these corrupt state officials drew \$2500 from the State Treasury and sent men to Washington to urge President Grant to refuse them aid. When the committee of the real citizens of South Carolina approached President Grant he treated them impatiently and their mission was a failure.

Moses pardoned all criminals who would pay him, and even his successor, Governor D. H. Chamberlain, a republican, said of him when he was illegally elected to the Supreme Court, "He is as infamous a

character as ever in any age disgraced and prostituted a public position."

Governor Chamberlain preached reform and perhaps tried to better conditions, but it had little effect. The people continued to send men to see President Grant but he only refused them aid and the question confronted the people to devise some means to secure control of their State and the Ku Klux Klan fulfilled their hopes at last, under the leadership of Captain James A. Townsend, First Grand Cyclops Ku Klux Klan of South Carolina.



## XXI.

### LOUISIANA.

There are historians who say there was no calamity to the South so great as the loss of Mr. Lincoln save perhaps that of the war; and but for that calamity the states undoubtedly would have continued with their self government in the Union on the lines that he had marked out and the horrors of reconstruction would have been avoided, but his indecision caused his plan to fail.

Congress had pledged its faith that the war was purposed only to save the Union, and was not for subjugation or oppression. Mr. Lincoln had throughout the war held to the fact that secession was null and void and the states still to be in the Union but acting rebelliously. Johnson likewise, as history shows, took the position that a state could not secede and that therefore none of the Southern states had ever been out of the Union.

When the laying down of arms was completed the "dawn which had cheered the close of Lincoln's life had become the full day of peace."

After the Confederate arms were laid down the "triune personality called (the government of the United States) took many steps in the establishment of peaceful conditions, beginning early in 1865 and



A half century after Louisiana was restored to the Union, the last state to be redeemed from radical and negro rule, it was significant that President Warren G. Harding (Republican) should have sent the following greeting to the United Confederate Veterans while in reunion in the city of New Orleans, Louisiana, 1923 and by this emphasizing the fact that the Confederate soldiers by another name the Klax Klan, had made the conditions to which President Harding gave homage. In answer to an invitation extended by Captain James Pinkney, Chairman of the Committee in charge of arrangements for the annual reunion, expressing his regrets at his inability to attend: "You say in part said President Harding the call of the time is equally to ~~impress~~ and impress the courage, loyalty and constructive citizenship of American manhood in the peace that followed the war. The Confederate Veterans began anew with resources exhausted and opportunity reduced, and by matchless energy, devotion and cooperation, rebuilt and rehabilitated their land into immense production and broad prosperity. ~~Still~~ quoting these sentences, because they have moved me to say that in my judgment the reconstruction of the South by the people of the South in the face of tremendous discouragements following the Civil War of the finest example that could be urged upon a war-wasted world to day. The people and Johnson's armies went home to their tasks of reconstruction with hearts of courage and purpose of determination to overcome all obstacles, to deserve the good will and help of others by providing their own good will and by helping themselves to the utmost of their capacity. They had earned the respect and regard of their opponents on the battle field; they earned it yet more completely and emphatically by their conduct afterward and in earning it they insured not only the Union's restoration but its advance to that splendid place which it holds in the family of nations. In this connection, because this theme has long made a peculiar appeal to me, I should like to add another thought. The men of the Confederate armies went home after the war to a land that not only was devastated, but had suffered literally a revolution of its economic system. However desirable as was the ultimate results of that revolution, it imposed upon the people of the South a complication of difficulties which vastly aggravated their task of reframing an empire's social and industrial plan of life. Their achievement in all the circumstances constitutes one of the great accomplishments of any people in all history."

Copyright

1924

Engrossed for

Authentic History Ku Klux Klan

1865-1877

Susan Lawrence Davis, Author.

ending in what may be called 'de jure peace'—that of April 2, 1866, all being done with the universal wishes of the people."

President Lincoln evidently had no intention of taking hold of the states after military necessity had passed, but his unwise, unpatriotic, and most impolitic policy was to restore relations and functions, based on the negro vote.

In a letter to Governor Michael Hahn, of Louisiana, dated March 13, 1864, Lincoln writes: "Now you are about to have a convention which, among other things, will define the elective franchise, I barely suggest for your consideration, whether some of the colored people may not be let in—as, for instance, the very intelligent. But this is only a suggestion not to be made public, but to you alone."

The writer will merely say here that both these men, namely, Governor Hahn and Abraham Lincoln, realized the people's fitness for self rule, and the duty in the premises of trusting the Southern people with all their future political problems.

About the time of Lincoln's death it leaked out that some unlawful or revolutionary scheme like the forming of a new Constitution was on foot. When it transpired the great Louisiana jurist, Christian Roselius, who had stood for the Union and against seceding in the convention of 1861 and through the war said, that "Every participant in the treasonable scheme should be arrested and sent to jail," but so secret was the conspiracy that it had actually matured a constitution. It was then that the horrors



of reconstruction began. The flagrant perfidy of politicians; the tyranny of military law, the trials of the drum-head, were just a few of the injustices to which the people of the state of Louisiana were submitted. After ten years of horror the reconstruction ended when the Ku Klux Klan redeemed the state.

In an election which was held November 4, 1872, the republican candidate, W. P. Kellogg, who had represented Louisiana in the Senate, was counted in by the Returning Board, which was not legal. The Federal power installed the Kellogg government which had not been elected and he was unable to perform the functions except when backed by Federal bayonets. This brought about great confusion and brought on the Colfax riot in which so many lives were lost. The people refused to pay any taxes to the Kellogg government and the Legislature passed some very stringent tax laws, among them one which contained a provision that if anyone failed to pay their taxes within thirty days he could not bring suit in his own behalf or be a witness in his own behalf and the officials were ordered to deny him his day in court until his taxes were paid. This and the Returning Board law were among the things that made such unrest among people and led them to organize under the name of the "White League." This league started to arm itself and Kellogg attempted to prevent. There was a collision and the two forces meeting on the levy had a bloody battle in which 40 persons were killed and 100 wounded. In the elec-

tion of 1874 the democrats were elected and the Returning Board by throwing out a number of polls and parishes elected a republican legislature. Kellogg was always writing to Washington for more troops and still more troops and he would use them just as he chose. General P. H. Sheridan was put in command of Louisiana and he telegraphed to the Secretary of War that fair dealing could be established in Louisiana by the arrest of the members of the White League. He urged that they should be declared banditti and tried by a military commission for untruthful men had convinced him and asked him to so inform the government that 1500 murders of Union men and negroes—political murders—had been committed in Louisiana since 1868. But all of this wrong-doing did not benefit Kellogg in the least. The White League was not the same organization as the Ku Klux Klan and preceded this organization in Louisiana. This state was made a member of the Invisible Empire in 1869 and did very efficient work in the campaign of 1876 when Louisiana was successful in her struggle for white supremacy.

Major Isbel, of General Forrest's staff, told Rev. Joseph E. Roy, a carpet-bagger in 1871, that whenever the negroes in Louisiana would work the former owners would offer them part of the crop and furnish everything and this plan worked well.

Mr. Roy said that General Forrest told him that he had never had any trouble with his negroes; that he took 45 negro men with him to the Civil War to drive his teams, care for his cavalry horses, cook for

him and otherwise assist him and he promised them that when the war was over, whether he won or not, he would set them free. He said he only lost four of them by death during the four years of the war and that the remaining forty-one were still with him on his plantation and loved him and honored him and would even cast their votes for him when he had not asked them to do so and the Republicans could not persuade them to vote with them when any issue was before the people that General Forrest wanted. He never ran for an office but asked for special taxes in Mississippi and Alabama for building a railroad.

Mr. Roy wrote to Northern people that four schools had been broken up by the Ku Klux Klan and several buildings burned and notices served on the white female teachers from the North to leave the state. "To show the spirit of the men, one of the state officials passed the negro school and I was standing near with Rev. J. W. Alvord of Boston, and he said, 'What is that, a school? Is it a "nigger school"?' I answered: 'Yes, sir, taught by females.' 'Well I have seen the end of absurdities,' he answered." Mr. Roy said that he heard an old steamboat captain in Louisiana say that General Ben Butler was the biggest thief in the world and that he had stolen enough silver spoons in New Orleans to build him a fine house in Washington City. Mr. Roy replied: "If you don't behave we will send General Butler back to straighten you out."

Mr. Roy said that he was on a boat with the famous Admiral Semmes of "*The Alabama*" and that he said he "submitted to force but that he still believed their

purposes were right." He further stated that Judge Lumpkin of Georgia told him that "by and by they meant to join the West and leave New England out in the cold, politically.

The national election depended on the vote of Louisiana in 1876 and therefore the whole country watched it with great interest and the methods of the Returning Board became known throughout the country and the people learned that the entire election machinery was in the hands of adventurous "carpet-baggers." There had been ballot box stuffing, falsification of returns and other crimes were clearly shown but this did not impress the government at Washington sufficiently to see the legally elected officers seated. The democrats had carried the state by 8000 majority but when the Returning Board got through with its work it had made a 9000 republican majority. There were two governments, one headed by Governor Nichols, duly elected by the popular vote and the other by a Mr. Packard and both these governments organized in 1877. From January to March Louisiana remained in this condition with two governors, two legislatures and two supreme courts.

Packard had promised the negroes anything they would ask for if they would vote for him so over 1000 of these negroes voters lived, ate and slept in the State Capitol. The magnificent building became so filthy that it was dangerous to the public health and finally smallpox broke out in the State House. With this horrible condition Packard still held on



hoping the Federal Government would help him as they had Kellogg to be seated. After several months of this condition in Louisiana there were many riots and civil war was threatened and President Rutherford B. Hayes decided to withdraw the troops and Packard packed his carpet-bag and left the State never to return.

In 1877 the period of reconstruction practically ended with the overthrow of radical rule in South Carolina and Louisiana, and the Union was restored as it was in 1776, by the Ku Klux Klan, commanded by the immortal Wizard of the Saddle and Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire, Nathan B. Forrest.

Mr. John C. Calhoun said: "The Constitution made the Union. There would have been no Union without the Constitution. Therefore when that Constitution was violated and repudiated by Abraham Lincoln and his party the Union was destroyed"—destroyed by the republican party—and this history will prove overwhelmingly that the Union was saved by the Ku Klux Klan.

This fact is stated that "confidence in the Southern people may be restored and that they truly accept the results of the war in good faith may be believed and may in some manner relieve the southern people from the charge of treason in order that their descendants and the future generation of Northern people may not, under the influence of so-called histories, false, partisan and vituperative cease to honor them and that their right to elect Southern men President of the United States may not be longer abridged.

Quoting from "All Around the Civil War" by William Hawn, of the Seventh Louisiana Regiment: "I yield to none in my devotion to the Union. One country, one Constitution, one destiny. The Union, of hearts, the Union of hands and the flag of our Union forever."

Colonel Lee Crandall of Louisiana was in "Stonewall Jackson's" corps, Confederate States Army, and now typifies the Union of States.

The Ku Klux Klan of Louisiana was led by General Albert G. Blanchard who was a Confederate soldier commanding a brigade.

## XXII.

### THE CLOSE OF THE KU KLUX KLAN.

I believe that the age in which we live, and the rapid march of events that have marked the progress of both North and South since the Civil War has caused the reconstruction period to be too little known; that even those of the North who were contemporaneous with this time, much less those who have grown to adults since, have very little knowledge of the cruelty and injustice visited upon the South by the unnecessary reconstruction methods.

Among the historic cruelties of the world they will stand out preëminent before the fair-minded, honest Northerner and will be classed by impartial minds with the horrible murder of the Duke of Alva in the Low Countries, which sent a thrill of horror throughout Christendom; the Massacre of St. Bartholomew and the Spanish Inquisition, and I here before God measuring my words, knowing their full extent and import that neither the deeds of the Duke of Alva in the Low Countries, nor the Massacre of St. Bartholomew, nor the thumb-screws or engines of torture of the Spanish Inquisition begin to compare with the atrocity and the hideous crime of reconstruction of the *seceded* states of the United States of America by the General Government.

This fact compelled the men of the South from the Potomac to the Rio Grande to forget all party lines, Union men and Secessionists, Whigs and Democrats, to consolidate into the one political body known as the "Solid South"; this did not follow the "Lost Cause," but to protect themselves against a return of such conditions as they suffered in 1865 to 1877, and this combination replaces the Ku Klux Klan which is for self-preservation, the first law of nature.

The final act of the Ku Klux Klan was assisting the people of South Carolina in seating their legal officials in 1877.

The Klan was at that time guided by General John B. Gordon who had been appointed by General Forrest to act in his place as he was ill. Captain John C. Lester, Captain John B. Kennedy, General Edmund Pettus, Major Robert Donnell and Major James R. Crowe and Colonel Sumner A. Cunningham accompanied him, leading of Ku Klux Klans, comprising many thousands, who were ready to come to the assistance of the State officials.

The Invisible Empire was of one accord, as in the words of General John B. Gordon, when he arose in the "Wallace House," by invitation of the Speaker and exclaimed:

"In times of great peril when the liberties of the people are involved, he that hesitates is a dastard, and he that doubts is damned."

As the years have gone by we can not fail to pay tribute to the men of the Ku Klux Klan who accomplished so much good. There is a sense of gratitude



throughout the South, and they are called the saviors of "Sunny South."

There was a bond of union, in the Ku Klux Klan, as strong as the eternal hills. There was a sense of honor never shown by any organization in the history of the world, where under no circumstances could they be induced to betray each other. "It arose in mystery, and was clothed in secrecy."

Will the world, today, deny the fact that the Ku Klux Klan solved the problem of White Supremacy, and that the "Solid South" was the direct outcome of its activities?

Dr. William M. Polk said, "The history of the Civil War South belongs to the 'men and women,' the history of Reconstruction (and the Ku Klux Klan) belong to the 'women and men,' for in that dire period when the men had almost collapsed, and were bewildered on their way, the women encouraged them to still fight on, for 'Field and Fireside,' under the leadership of the Ku Klux Klan, between the years 1865 and 1877."

The women made the regalia for the Ku Klux Klan, kept the home-fires burning, guarded the secrets of the Klan, and by their inspiration, held before them a vision of the "Glorified South" of today; making possible the dream and the determination of the Ku Klux Klan, whose very motive and act proclaimed: "Out of this nettle danger, we pluck this flower, Safety!"; safety for the white race, safety for separation of Church and State, safety for Civilization in saving our Republican form of government.

The Ku Klux Klan, its work done, and well done, disbanded forever, upon the death of General Nathan B. Forrest, in 1877.

When Forrest's great spirit had passed, his name was engraven upon the hearts of all the Southland as sacred, and as a synonym for "Ku Klux Klan."

General Forrest spent the summer of 1877 seeking health in the mountains of Tennessee, at Hurricane Springs, and in August he went to Elkmont Springs, Giles County, near Pulaski, the birthplace of the Ku Klux Klan. The marvelous mineral water of these springs improved his condition for awhile but the deep-seated disease had wrought its work and it was apparent that his days were numbered.

He called the Ku Klux Klan to meet at Elkmont Springs and assured them that his prayer had been answered—and the South was saved. He then issued by couriers a call for a final meeting at Athens, Alabama, of all the Klansmen of the "Invisible Empire," as his strength was failing and this place was on his way back to his home in Memphis.

All of the Grand Dragons of the Realms of the Invisible Empire responded to the call and many other of the Ku Klux Klan were there when the meeting was held in 1877, in the "Pepin Hall"—an improvised auditorium in the upper chamber of the Home of Mr. and Mrs. Henry J. Pepin, for all public buildings had been destroyed by the Federal Army and this was the meeting place for all public gatherings at that time.

In the "Pepin Hall" was an altar which had been

placed there by Mr. and Mrs. Pepin who were Catholics, and who arranged to have a priest come at intervals for services and they would invite the Catholics far and near to attend.

In this Hall in 1867, the Trinity Episcopal Church, of Athens, was organized; Mrs. Pattie Vasser McClure, later Mrs. Charles Berry, and her brilliant and saintly sister, Mrs. Rebecca Vasser Howard-Saunders, were the leading spirits. Right Reverend Richard Hooker Wilmer was the Bishop of Alabama at this time. This church held services in this hall until 1875, when the Court House which had been destroyed by the United States Army during the war was rebuilt and a room was loaned to this Church until funds were raised by Mrs. Saunders' indefatigable efforts to build the present Trinity Church.

The Masonic Hall of the town had been damaged by the Federal soldiers and this hall was used by the Masons. On the night General Forrest met with the Ku Klux Klan the last time this hall was used by the Masons, who first donned their Masonic regalia and an hour later their Ku Klux Klan regalia.

General Forrest had orally communicated to the Grand Dragons of the Invisible Empire, his order of *disbandment* number one (No. 1, September, 1877) after which he reverently approached the little altar and kneeling led them in prayer.

He arose and turned to them and with great emotion and said, "Mary's and my Mother's prayers have

been answered, and I have made my peace with God, and I wish to die at peace with all the world."

He thanked the Ku Klux Klan for their fidelity to him during his leadership, and assured them that he had never doubted them, or believed that they had ever violated their Ku Klux oath. General Nathan B. Forrest's last words to the Ku Klux Klan were: "There never was a time before or since its organization when such an Order as the Ku Klux Klan could have lived. *May there never be again!*"





# THE WALLACE HOUSE

## *Abbeville.*

1. W. W. Bradley,
2. R. R. Hemphill,
3. F. A. Conner,
4. William Hood,
5. T. L. Moore.

## *Aiken.*

6. C. E. Sawyer,
7. J. J. Woodward,
8. L. M. Asbill,
9. J. G. Guignard.

## *Anderson.*

10. H. R. Vandiver,
11. R. W. Simpson,
12. W. C. Brown,
13. James L. Orr.

## *Barnwell.*

14. Isaac S. Bamberg,
15. John W. Holmes,
16. L. W. Youmans,
17. M. A. Rountree,
18. Robert Aldrich.

## *Beaufort.*

19. T. Hamilton, Rep.
20. N. B. Myers, Rep.

## *Chesterfield.*

21. J. C. Coit,
22. D. T. Redfearn.

## *Colleton.*

23. H. E. Bissell,
24. Wm. Maree,
25. J. N. Cummings,
26. L. E. Parler,
27. Robert Jones.

## *Edgefield.*

28. W. S. Allen,
29. J. C. Sheppard,
30. James Callison,
31. T. E. Jennings,
32. H. A. Shaw.

## *Greenville.*

33. J. F. Donald,
34. J. Thos. Austin,
35. J. W. Gray,
36. J. L. Westmoreland.

## *Horry.*

37. L. D. Bryan,
38. John R. Cooper.

## *Lancaster.*

39. John B. Erwin,
40. J. C. Blakeney.

## *Laurens.*

41. J. B. Humbert,
42. J. W. Watts,
43. D. W. Anderson.

## *Lexington.*

44. G. Leaphart,
45. G. Muller.

## *Marion.*

46. J. G. Blue,
47. James McRea,
48. R. H. Rodgers,
49. J. P. Davis.

## *Marlboro.*

50. Philip M. Hamer,
51. Thos. M. Edens.

## *Newberry.*

52. S. S. Bridges, R.

## *Oconee.*

53. B. Frank Sloan,
54. John S. Verner.

## *Orangeburg.*

55. W. H. Reedish, wh. Rep.

## *Pickens.*

56. D. F. Bradley,
57. E. H. Bates.

## *Spartanburg.*

58. W. P. Compton,
59. John W. Wofford,
60. F. S. Allen,
61. Charles Petty.

*Sumter.*

62. J. H. Westberry.

*Union.*

63. W. H. Wallace, Sp'r.

64. G. D. Peake,

65. Wm. Jeffries.

*York.*

66. A. E. Hutchison,

67. J. A. Deal,

68. W. E. Byers,

69. B. H. Massey

*The Wallace House. Organized November 28, 1876.*

## OFFICERS:

70. John T. Sloan, Clerk.

71. W. McB. Sloan, Asst. Clerk.

72. W. R. Williams, Reading Cl'k.

73. J. D. Brown, Sergeant-at-arms.

74. D. R. Elsin, Asst. Sergt.-at-arms.

75. L. N. Zealy, Door Keeper.

76. Judge Thompson H. Cooke, of the Eighth Circuit, who administered the oath of office to the Members.

Copyright Secured (1877)

by

W. A. Reckling,

Photographic Artist.

Columbia, South Carolina.





R01157 89562



•  
R01157 89562

STILL'S BOOKBINDERY  
3605 WHITE OAK DR.  
HOUSTON, TEXAS 77007



